

# Discipleship Method

David F. May

November 29, 2020

November 28, 2020

2018-2020 Great Commission Cell Church

All rights reserved.

*Discipleship Method* is licensed under a Creative Commons Attribution 3.0 Unported License.

You may use this work for any purpose, commercial as well as non-commercial, as long as you do not claim that it is your own and you make digital copies available to those to whom you provide this work in written form at no extra cost.

Release: 1.1

# Contents

<b>I</b>	<b>Making Disciples</b>	<b>6</b>
<b>1</b>	<b>Disciple</b>	<b>7</b>
1.1	Disciple rather than Christian or believer . . . . .	7
1.1.1	Important caveat . . . . .	7
1.2	Call of a disciple . . . . .	9
1.2.1	Discipleship in the context of Scripture . . . . .	10
1.2.1.1	Discipleship is relational . . . . .	10
1.2.1.2	Live the disciple’s life together . . . . .	10
1.2.1.3	Obey the Great Commandment together . . . . .	12
1.2.1.4	Do the Great Commission together . . . . .	13
1.2.1.5	Small groups: Biblical template for discipleship . . . . .	13
1.2.2	Why is discipleship important? . . . . .	15
1.2.2.1	Results . . . . .	15
1.2.2.2	The world is in desperate need . . . . .	17
1.2.2.3	No plan B . . . . .	22
1.3	Master plan of evangelism . . . . .	22
1.3.1	Jesus chose His disciples . . . . .	22
1.3.2	Jesus associated with His disciples . . . . .	23
1.3.3	Jesus set them apart for the call . . . . .	24
1.3.4	Jesus gave the Spirit . . . . .	27
1.3.5	Jesus showed His disciples how to live . . . . .	30
1.3.6	Jesus delegated His work to His disciples . . . . .	31
1.3.7	After Jesus sent the disciples out, He debriefed them . . . . .	34
1.3.8	The final goal Jesus had in creating disciples was reproduction . . . . .	35
1.3.9	My perspective . . . . .	37
<b>2</b>	<b>Stages of a disciple’s growth</b>	<b>38</b>
2.1	Stage 1 - spiritually dead . . . . .	38
2.2	Stage 2 - Infant . . . . .	39
2.3	Stage 3 - Spiritual Child . . . . .	40
2.3.1	Overcoming sin . . . . .	41
2.3.1.1	Confess your sin . . . . .	42
2.3.1.2	Repent of your sin . . . . .	42
2.3.1.3	Approach the throne of grace . . . . .	43
2.3.1.4	Before the throne, determine you will not live this way anymore . . . . .	43
2.3.1.5	Overcoming sin for the rest of your life . . . . .	43
2.4	Stage 4 - Young adult . . . . .	43
2.4.1	Ministry . . . . .	44
2.4.2	SACRED . . . . .	44
2.5	Stage 5 – Spiritual fathers and mothers . . . . .	46
2.5.1	Know God . . . . .	47
2.5.2	Train up children . . . . .	47
2.5.3	Dream the dream of God . . . . .	48
2.5.3.1	Culture of honor . . . . .	48
2.5.3.2	Will of the Father . . . . .	52

<b>II</b>	<b>Where are you?</b>	<b>54</b>
2.6	Assessment . . . . .	55
2.7	Rating yourself . . . . .	61
2.7.1	Your spiritual maturity . . . . .	61
<b>III</b>	<b>Reproducible process for discipleship</b>	<b>62</b>
<b>3</b>	<b>Create an environment for growth</b>	<b>63</b>
3.1	Relational environment . . . . .	63
3.1.1	Must be "caught" as well as taught . . . . .	63
3.1.1.1	Two or three are better than one . . . . .	63
3.1.2	Relationship makes the message real . . . . .	64
3.1.3	Requirements for relational environment . . . . .	64
3.1.3.1	Real teaching . . . . .	64
3.1.3.2	Shepherding . . . . .	64
3.1.3.3	Transparency . . . . .	65
3.1.3.4	Accountability . . . . .	66
3.1.3.5	Guided practice . . . . .	66
3.1.3.6	Bible study . . . . .	66
3.2	Reproducible process . . . . .	69
3.2.1	Share . . . . .	69
3.2.2	Connect . . . . .	69
3.2.3	Minister . . . . .	69
3.2.4	Disciple . . . . .	69
3.2.5	The process in the New Testament . . . . .	70
3.2.5.1	Barnabas walked with Paul . . . . .	70
3.2.5.2	Barnabas did the same for Mark . . . . .	70
3.2.5.3	Paul walked with Titus, Timothy, Luke, Silas, and others . . . . .	70
3.2.5.4	Paul encouraged his team to reproduce the process in others . . . . .	71
3.2.6	Only do our part . . . . .	71
3.2.6.1	God's part . . . . .	71
3.2.6.2	Our part . . . . .	72
3.2.6.3	Their part . . . . .	72
<b>IV</b>	<b>Expanded process in each stage</b>	<b>73</b>
<b>4</b>	<b>Spiritually dead</b>	<b>74</b>
4.1	Share and connect . . . . .	74
4.2	Recognizing the spiritually dead . . . . .	74
4.3	Some things the spiritually dead might say . . . . .	74
4.4	Needs of the spiritually dead . . . . .	75
4.4.1	How do we share the gospel? . . . . .	75
4.4.1.1	Man has a sin problem . . . . .	75
4.4.1.2	Romans Road - path to salvation . . . . .	76
4.4.1.3	Jesus bore our Sin on the cross . . . . .	76
4.4.1.4	He wants you to believe . . . . .	76
4.4.1.5	He wants you to receive His gift . . . . .	76
4.4.1.6	If you receive Him... . . . . .	76
4.4.1.7	Pray the Sinner's prayer to receive Jesus . . . . .	76
4.4.1.8	God's part and your part . . . . .	77
4.5	Biblical needs of the spiritually dead . . . . .	77
4.5.1	Seek the lost . . . . .	77
4.5.1.1	Repent . . . . .	78
4.6	What to do with the spiritually dead . . . . .	78
4.6.1	Share and connect . . . . .	78

<b>5</b>	<b>Spiritual infants</b>	<b>79</b>
5.1	Share and connect . . . . .	79
5.2	Recognizing spiritual infants . . . . .	79
5.3	Some things spiritual infants might say . . . . .	79
5.4	Needs of spiritual infants . . . . .	80
5.4.1	Biblical needs of spiritual infants . . . . .	80
5.4.1.1	Disciples follow Jesus . . . . .	80
5.4.1.2	Lay a solid foundation . . . . .	81
5.4.1.3	Walk in growth . . . . .	82
5.4.1.4	Walk in the traditions . . . . .	82
5.4.1.5	Walk in humility . . . . .	83
5.5	What to do with spiritual infants . . . . .	83
<b>6</b>	<b>Spiritual Child</b>	<b>85</b>
6.1	Connect, minister, disciple . . . . .	85
6.2	Recognizing a spiritual child . . . . .	85
6.3	Representative phrases from a spiritual child . . . . .	86
6.4	Needs of spiritual children . . . . .	86
6.4.1	Biblical needs of spiritual children . . . . .	86
6.4.1.1	Jesus is Lord . . . . .	86
6.4.1.2	Jesus is Creator God . . . . .	87
6.4.1.3	Jesus is the Son of God . . . . .	87
6.4.1.4	Jesus is the Son of Man . . . . .	88
6.4.1.5	He was born the King of the Jews . . . . .	88
6.4.1.6	Jesus will return . . . . .	88
6.4.1.7	Jesus is our High Priest . . . . .	88
6.4.1.8	Jesus the Good Shepherd . . . . .	89
6.4.1.9	Salvation is by grace through faith . . . . .	89
6.4.1.10	Jesus saves from sin . . . . .	91
6.4.1.11	Submit to those who serve . . . . .	94
6.4.1.12	Disciples obey the Lord . . . . .	94
6.4.1.13	Disciples follow Jesus . . . . .	96
6.4.1.14	Disciples lose their lives for Jesus . . . . .	97
6.4.1.15	Walk in moral excellence . . . . .	97
6.4.1.16	We are commanded to forgive others . . . . .	98
6.4.1.17	Righteousness by faith . . . . .	99
6.4.1.18	Personal righteousness . . . . .	100
6.4.1.19	Salvation comes from Jesus . . . . .	100
6.4.1.20	Disciples are blessed . . . . .	101
6.5	What to do with spiritual children . . . . .	101
<b>7</b>	<b>Spiritual young adult</b>	<b>102</b>
7.1	Minister . . . . .	102
7.2	Recognizing spiritual young adults . . . . .	102
7.3	Representative things spiritual young adults may say . . . . .	102
7.4	Needs of spiritual young adults . . . . .	103
7.4.1	Biblical needs of spiritual young adults . . . . .	103
7.4.1.1	Pray for the Church . . . . .	103
7.4.1.2	Pray as Jesus taught . . . . .	103
7.4.1.3	Persevere in prayer . . . . .	104
7.4.1.4	Testify . . . . .	105
7.4.1.5	Authority of those who serve . . . . .	106
7.4.1.6	Spiritual Gifts . . . . .	106
7.4.1.7	Faith Commanded . . . . .	108
7.4.1.8	Disciples are called . . . . .	108
7.4.1.9	Disciples bear fruit . . . . .	109
7.4.1.10	Disciples run to win . . . . .	110

7.4.1.11	Disciples are taught of the Lord . . . . .	111
7.4.1.12	Disciples are tested . . . . .	112
7.4.1.13	Disciples confess Him before men . . . . .	112
7.4.1.14	Walk in God's will . . . . .	114
7.4.1.15	Walk in perseverance . . . . .	114
7.4.1.16	Walk in the Spirit . . . . .	115
7.4.1.17	Walk in unity . . . . .	117
7.4.1.18	Walk in wisdom . . . . .	118
7.4.1.19	Give generously . . . . .	119
7.4.1.20	Courage . . . . .	120
7.4.1.21	God's will . . . . .	120
7.4.1.22	Hold fast . . . . .	121
7.4.1.23	Use healing and miracles . . . . .	121
7.5	What to do with spiritual young adults . . . . .	122
7.5.1	Help them understand ministry . . . . .	122
7.5.1.1	Defend the gospel . . . . .	122
7.5.1.2	Work under and with the elders and pastors . . . . .	123
7.5.2	Help them to be ministers . . . . .	123
7.5.2.1	Equip them to be courageous . . . . .	123
7.5.2.2	Help them learn to work with a team . . . . .	123
7.5.2.3	Teach them to be disciplined and responsible . . . . .	123
<b>8</b>	<b>Spiritual Parents</b> . . . . .	<b>124</b>
8.1	Disciple . . . . .	124
8.2	Recognizing spiritual parents . . . . .	124
8.3	Representative things spiritual parents might say . . . . .	124
8.4	Needs of spiritual parents . . . . .	124
8.4.1	Biblical needs of spiritual parents . . . . .	125
8.4.1.1	Teach against evil doctrine . . . . .	125
8.4.1.2	Teach with authority . . . . .	125
8.4.1.3	Teach with integrity . . . . .	126
8.4.1.4	Jesus was sent by the Father . . . . .	127
8.4.1.5	Bear burdens . . . . .	127
8.4.1.6	Jesus modeled serving . . . . .	128
8.4.1.7	Overseers and servants . . . . .	128
8.4.1.8	Serve God's people . . . . .	129
8.4.1.9	Love commanded . . . . .	129
8.4.1.10	What it means to love . . . . .	130
8.4.1.11	Importance of Church discipline . . . . .	131
8.4.1.12	Faith modeled by Jesus . . . . .	132
8.4.1.13	Parents model discipleship . . . . .	132
8.4.1.14	Disciples make disciples . . . . .	133
8.4.1.15	Walk harmlessly . . . . .	133
8.4.1.16	Jesus modeled strength . . . . .	134
8.4.1.17	Disciples provide for others . . . . .	134
8.4.1.18	Reach all the world . . . . .	134
8.4.1.19	Bring the Kingdom of God . . . . .	135
8.5	What to do with spiritual parents . . . . .	135

Part I

Making Disciples

# Chapter 1

## Disciple

### 1.1 Disciple rather than Christian or believer

The Bible only uses the word “Christian” three times. The word “Christian” means, literally, “little Christ”. It was a mocking term, used to belittle people who worked hard to live like Jesus. The term “believer” is used nine times to refer to those who follow Jesus. However, the word “disciple” is used over 200 times to refer to followers of Jesus.

Now, we should strive to be “little Christs”, so Christian is a fine term. Also, we should believe in Jesus, so believer is a fine term. However, we should not allow traditional terms to keep us from understanding what it means to be a Christian. The Bible is clear. Disciples give to, serve and love people. Disciples do God’s will and testify of Jesus. Disciples are blessed, called, taught of Jesus, and tested. Disciples bear fruit, confess Him before men, face persecution with joy, fast, and find rest in Jesus. Disciples follow Jesus as bond-servants. They lose their lives for Jesus, obey Jesus, provide for others, run to win, value people, and step out in faith. Most importantly, though, disciples make other disciples.

In this short work, I am going to help you learn what it means to be a servant of Jesus. When the Bible talks about being a Christian or a believer, it is talking about being a disciple. From the perspective of the Bible, you can’t be a Christian or a believer without being a disciple. There are not multiple standards about what a Christian is; Biblically, there is only one standard. My hope is to raise that standard in this work so you can follow Jesus with all your heart.

#### 1.1.1 Important caveat

I do not hate the modern church.

I love the people who go to those churches. Many of them want desperately to serve the Lord, and they are doing everything they know to do. However, overall, the results of the efforts of modern churches is pretty dismal. Huge amounts of money and energy are poured into maintaining buildings, and buildings are not necessary to make disciples. Considerable energy is poured into maintaining the status quo with a professional clergy and all the trappings thereof, and you don’t need a professional clergy to make disciples. Multiple billions of dollars get poured into “ministries” which are flashy and held in high esteem by people in modern churches. You don’t need any of those things to make disciples.

If it sounds like I hate modern churches, you are probably hearing my frustration. For over twenty-five years, I struggled as part of modern churches. I was faithful for years, sometimes decades, and still the gains I made in maturity and anointing were slow and weak. Sometimes I felt I grew in spite of the churches rather than because of them. Albert Einstein said that one definition of insanity is to do the same things over and over and expect different results. Unfortunately, this describes many modern churches.

Some modern churches “succeed”. They have many members, many FTEs (full-time employees), large buildings and they conduct many activities. And yet, when measured by the simple metric of how many life-long committed disciples are created by these churches, most fail, even the ones that “succeed”. The metric of how many disciples are created is the only metric that counts in my reading of the New Testament.

The early church had no buildings, except for houses which people gathered in.<sup>1</sup>The early church had no professional clergy. The activities of the early church were overseen and coordinated by gifted men and women, but these were not paid professionals. The activities of the early church were not causes designed to keep people busy, but

---

<sup>1</sup>Granted, the Jerusalem church met in the temple, but it was not the focus of church activities or church life.



their activity was the work of bringing people to Christ and helping them grow. And yet the Lord added to the early church day by day those who were being saved.

The early church created true disciples. Men and women like Paul, Peter, John, Barnabas, Philip, Stephen, Phoebe, Mary of Rome (Rom 16:6), Silas, Timothy, Priscilla, Aquila, Epaphras, Luke, Mary Magdalene, Mark, the women who provided for Jesus, Euodia and Syntyche march across the pages of Scripture. This is just a sample; I could go on and on. These people were raised up by the Bible as representative of the quality of disciple produced by the early church. They served God, they served each other, and they built God's kingdom in their generation. And all they had was a commitment to Jesus, love, the Holy Spirit and each other.

You don't need the trappings of the modern church to make disciples; that enough is clear. My conviction after decades of study and observation is that the things held as important by the modern church actually keep us from being successful at making disciples. If you center the life of the church around buildings, you will fail to make disciples. If you emphasize the role of the clergy over the role of everyone else, you will fail to make disciples. If your standard of success is how many people come every week and how much is given in the offering, you will fail to make disciples.

Think about any modern church of which you have experience. Answer the following questions for that church:

- Are the people in that church overcoming sin in their own lives?
- Are they walking in purity and power?
- Is their lifestyle such that they can tell younger people to imitate them?
- Is the Lord adding regularly to that church people who are being saved?
- Have most of the people in that church led someone to Christ?
- Are most of the people in that church working with others to help them grow and become disciples of the Lord?
- Are people growing to the point where they are strong, the word abides in them, and they are overcoming the evil one?
- Do the members have a vision for a life of serving God, serving other disciples and serving the world?
- Are the members in that church growing, becoming strong in the word, and seeing God's miracles in their lives and in the lives of others?
- Is everyone in that church getting the pastoral attention they need?
- Are those who are less mature in that church covered and protected by those who are more mature?
- Are the activities of the church overseen by men and women who are seasoned and display the character of God in their lives?
- Do the overseers in that church dream the dream of God for the world and work to see that dream become a reality in the earth?
- Is that church changing the world around them?
- If you removed the Holy Spirit from that church and took away the Bible from everyone who goes to that church, would it make a difference in what the church does or in the effectiveness in that church?
- There is a maturity assessment in this document. If everyone in that church took the assessment, would more than one out of four members be rated as young adult or higher?

Sadly, the answer for most of these questions for any given modern church is, "No". The answer to these questions would mostly be a resounding, "Yes", for churches (assemblies) in the first Century of Christianity. And where the answers were "No", apostles and prophets would be working in those churches to correct the faults. What we have as the standard modus operandi in modern churches is not okay, in my opinion. I love the leadership of these churches, and I love the people, but I am not in support of the approach to business. If what you are doing is not creating quality disciples of Jesus, change what you were doing and do what Jesus demonstrated and what His apostles said to do.

## 1.2 Call of a disciple

The mission of Jesus is to make disciples. Disciples follow Jesus, listen to His voice, do what He says, obey Him, seek Him, serve Him, love Him, and refuse to deny Him. Disciples are diligent to study, faithful to give and serve, and love others with a passion. Disciples suffer persecution and work to the point of exhaustion for other people. Disciples refuse to stop serving Jesus, even if they lose their lives for doing so. The Scriptures are clear that you can't be a real Christian without being a disciple of Jesus.

Our job as disciples is to make disciples. What does that mean? It means we reproduce. We love people who don't know Jesus until they get born again. Then, we baptize them, teach them to observe what Jesus commanded, and help them grow up to the point in their spiritual lives where they can make disciples themselves.

Making disciples is difficult work. It is easier to take up causes, like wells in Africa and feeding the poor. It is easier to fight injustice, like abortion and the oppression of the weak. It is easier to sit in comfortable pews, listen to comfortable sermons, and give money. And while these things have value, they cannot take the place of making disciples in the life of the disciple.

### *We are called to make disciples.*

Making disciples is built into our DNA. Parents are called to make children who grow up to be parents. There is no plan B in populating the earth, and there is no spiritual plan B for building God's kingdom. Making disciples is the work we are called to do. No one can do it for us. It should be the core mission of the Church. It should be our battle cry and our worldly pursuit. If we succeed at everything else, and we do not make disciples, we will have failed at the Christian life and failed at being faithful disciples of Jesus.

Here are the high-level steps to making disciples as outlined in Scripture:

- Pursue Jesus as a disciple and grow up in Him.
  - Make Jesus more important than anything else in your life.
  - Read and study the Bible.
  - Pray regularly.
  - Give yourself wholly to the purpose of God in the earth.
    - \* Determine God's purpose for you and your oikos.
    - \* Do it.
  - Grow to a reproducing spiritual parent.
- Pursue others, loving and serving them until they become disciples.
- Help them grow up to full adulthood in the spirit (mothers and fathers in the Lord) so they can reproduce in the lives of others.
  - While they are unbelievers, love them, answer their questions, listen to them, and spend time with them. Guide them to having a life-giving relationship with Jesus. Help them become disciples, committed to living the lifestyle of New Testament Christianity.
  - While they are babies, teach them to crave the pure milk of the word so that by it they may grow. Even at this stage, their growth will be stunted unless they are disciples, fully committed to following Jesus regardless of the cost.
  - While they are children, teach them how to train their senses to righteousness, knowing good from evil. This is the process of overcoming sin: Confess, repent, approach the throne of grace, repent, and determine before the throne you will not live this way anymore (mortify the carnal nature).<sup>2</sup>Clean up their messes and teach them to be disciples of Jesus.
  - While they are young adults, teach them to overcome the devil and live in victory. Here we put in them a purpose, a calling to serve something bigger than themselves, and a willingness to fight for others and to follow the Holy Spirit until He leads them to change the world around them. Here, as young adults, they should really start to make disciples.
  - When they become parents, teach them to efficiently reproduce, help others grow to full maturity and oversee the discipleship process in the Church.

---

<sup>2</sup>Most modern Christians do not live this way and, hence, never get beyond this level of maturity.

- Walk with them until they are reproducing disciples who can train others to reproduce.
- Work with them to transform the world.

Notice we are not making disciples who follow us; we are making disciples of Jesus, people who follow Jesus. Always point the people you serve to Jesus, teaching them to rely on Him and be dependent on Him. You do not want people dependent on you.

Matthew 28:18-20 (WEB)

18. Jesus came to them and spoke to them, saying, “**All authority** has been given to me in heaven and on earth.

19. Go and **make disciples** of all nations, **baptizing them** in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit,

20. **teaching them to observe all things that I commanded you.** Behold, I am with you always, even to the end of the age.” Amen.

## 1.2.1 Discipleship in the context of Scripture

So what is discipleship? What does the bible have to say about it? It turns out that the Bible has a lot to say about discipleship. This makes sense since the most used title for “Christian” in the Bible is disciple and the core function of the disciple in Scripture is to make disciples.

### 1.2.1.1 Discipleship is relational

When men and women walk together in discipleship, they stand with each other. They are in relationship that is not casual. The world has a standard for relationships that says, “If it feels good...” Disciples have a different standard in relationships, one which sticks closer than a brother.

Ecclesiastes 4:9-12 (WEB)

9. **Two are better than one**, because they have a good reward for their labor.

10. For if they fall, the one will lift up his fellow; but woe to him who is alone when he falls, and doesn’t have another to lift him up.

11. Again, if two lie together, then they have warmth; but how can one keep warm alone?

12. If a man prevails against one who is alone, two shall withstand him; and **a threefold cord is not quickly broken.**

Proverbs 27:5-6 (WEB)

5. **Better is open rebuke than hidden love.**

6. The wounds of a friend are faithful, although the kisses of an enemy are profuse.

Proverbs 18:24 (WEB)

24. A man of many companions may be ruined, but there is a **friend who sticks closer than a brother.**

1 Corinthians 15:33 (WEB)

33. Don’t be deceived! “**Evil companionships corrupt good morals.**”

Proverbs 13:20 (WEB)

20. One who walks with wise men **grows wise**, but a companion of fools **suffers harm.**

### 1.2.1.2 Live the disciple’s life together

But discipleship is more than just walking together. We are called to serve God together. We are called to give our lives to Christ, and then give our lives to each other. This is the Biblical key to growth. We don’t grow without others in our lives actively correctng, caring for, supporting, and loving us; and showing compassion and friendship to us. We need the Lord (Father, Son and Holy Spirit) and we need each other.

Acts 2:42 (WEB)

42. They **continued steadfastly** in the **apostles' teaching** and **fellowship**, in the **breaking of bread**, and **prayer**.

Ephesians 4:11-17 (WEB)

11. He gave some to be **apostles**; and some, **prophets**; and some, **evangelists**; and some, **shepherds and teachers**;

12. for the **perfecting of the saints**, to the **work of serving**, to the **building up of the body of Christ**,

13. until **we all attain to the unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of God**, to a **full grown man**, to the **measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ**,

14. that we may **no longer be children**, tossed back and forth and carried about with **every wind of doctrine**, by the **trickery of men, in craftiness, after the wiles of error**;

15. but **speaking truth in love**, we may **grow up in all things into him** who is the **head, Christ**,

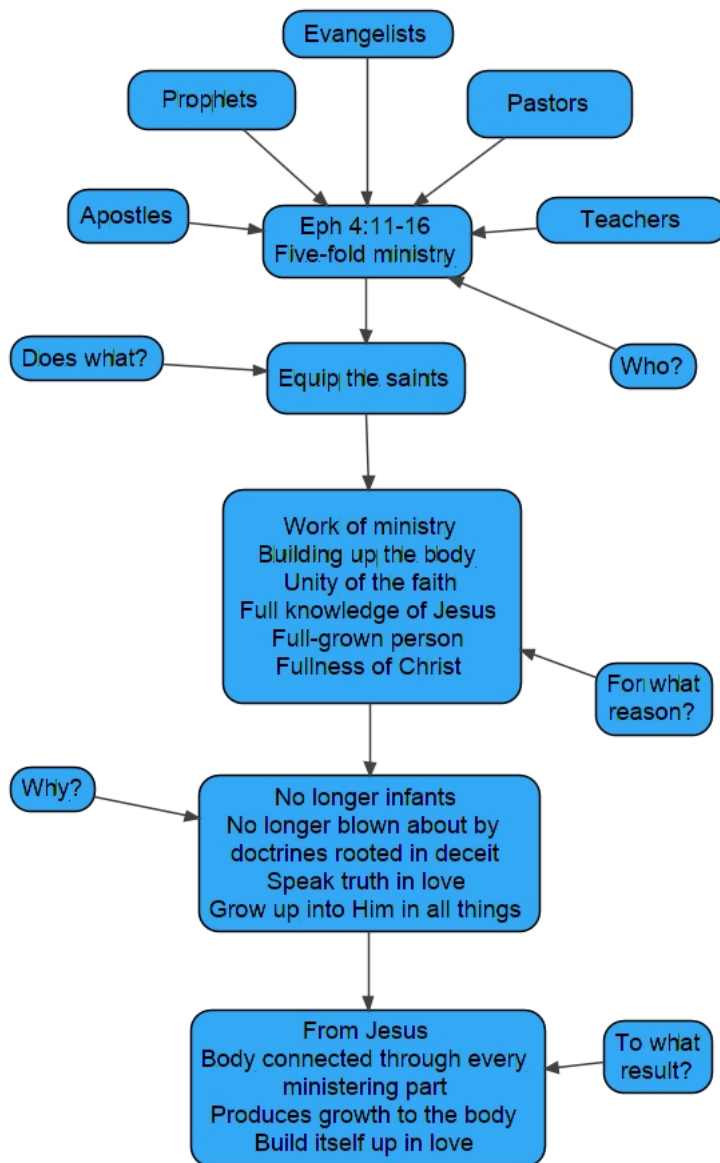
16. **from whom** all the **body**, being **fitted and knit together** through **that which every joint supplies**, according to the **working in measure of each individual part**, makes the **body increase to the building up of itself in love**.

17. This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that you **no longer walk as the rest of the Gentiles also walk, in the futility of their mind**,

Colossians 2:19 (WEB)

19. and not **holding firmly to the Head, from whom all the body, being supplied and knit together through the joints and ligaments, grows with God's growth**.

The following graphic shows in visual format how all this works:



So, we as disciples receive from Jesus everything we need. From that connection with Jesus, we feed others (fellow disciples). From that, the body grows, which is what the Lord wants. Discipleship is a critical component of the growth of the body.

### 1.2.1.3 Obey the Great Commandment together

From the very beginning, when you start meeting together as a discipleship group (or a CORE group – more on that later), make it clear to everyone that you are going to obey the Great Commandment (Love God, love men), you are going to obey the Great Commission (make disciples) and you are going to do these things together. Have each person chose two or three people they know and start praying for them, believing God for opportunities to share Christ with them and pull them into a group like this one.

Matthew 22:37-40 (WEB)

37. Jesus said to him, “You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.’

38. This is the first and great commandment.

39. A second likewise is this, ‘You shall love your neighbor as yourself.’

40. The whole law and the prophets depend on these two commandments.”

Mark 12:29-31 (WEB)

29. Jesus answered, “The **greatest** is, ‘Hear, Israel, the Lord our God, the Lord is one:

30. you shall **love the Lord** your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind, and with all your strength.’ **This is the first commandment.**

31. The **second is like this**, ‘You shall love your neighbor as yourself.’ There is **no other commandment greater than these.**”

Luke 10:27-28 (WEB)

27. He answered, “You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, with all your strength, and with all your mind; and your neighbor as yourself.”

28. He said to him, “You have answered correctly. **Do this, and you will live.**”

#### 1.2.1.4 Do the Great Commission together

Disciples make disciples. This is the Biblical pattern, and this is what you are striving for. You are going to **be** a disciple, and then you are going to walk others through **becoming** disciples. This is in your spiritual DNA. Matthew 28:19 says literally, “As you go, make disciples of all culture groups...” The emphasis is on the “make disciples”, not on the “go” or on “culture groups”. You need to start making disciples where you are. This is not pie in the sky stuff. This is here and now. Reach out to people, share your life and love with them, bring some to Christ, and those you bring to Christ, walk with them as disciples. You and them will learn how to be disciples of Christ together.

When the people you are walking with are able to walk with others to see them become disciples, let the person you are walking with facilitate your group while they reach out to others and start another group. Watch the person as he or she walks through discipleship with others, providing consistent feedback. When the person is able to do the work on their own, let them facilitate their own group and be there to support them. Finally, release them to do this on their own. Make sure they understand that you expect them to make disciples who make disciples for the rest of their lives.

Matthew 28:19-20 (WEB)

19. Go and **make disciples** of all nations, **baptizing them** in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit,

20. **teaching them to observe all things that I commanded you.** Behold, I am with you always, even to the end of the age.” Amen.

1 Corinthians 4:17 (WEB)

17. Because of this I have sent Timothy to you, who is my beloved and faithful child in the Lord, who will **remind you of my ways** which are in Christ, **even as I teach everywhere in every assembly.**

1 Timothy 4:11 (WEB)

11. **Command and teach these things.**

2 Timothy 2:2 (WEB)

2. The things which **you** have heard from **me** among **many witnesses**, commit the same things to **faithful men**, who will be **able to teach others** also.

Titus 2:3-4 (WEB)

3. and that **older women** likewise be reverent in behavior, not slanderers nor enslaved to much wine, teachers of that which is good,

4. that they may **train the young wives** to love their husbands, to love their children,

#### 1.2.1.5 Small groups: Biblical template for discipleship

Jesus ministered to the multitudes. He ministered to the 500 who saw Him after He rose. He ministered to the 120 in the upper room. He ministered to and walked with the 70 and the 12. However, He walked in a disciple group with Peter, James and John. He prioritized these three disciples. He left larger groups of people to spend time with this group. The team of Jesus, Peter, James and John was a small group (three to four people of disciples walking together for a season). Jesus did this so they could grow and become the leaders He needed to build and oversee His Kingdom. He also did this to show the true pattern of discipleship.

Discipleship is not best done one on one. Discipleship is best done in small groups of three or four. This is the best way to train disciples, to model the lifestyle of godliness and to see people grow. You can't hide in a small group. Your life is an open book. This is what the Bible means when it says we should walk in the light. Some call this a CORE group, others a disciple group. The name is unimportant. The power is in the relationships, in the commitment to each other and in the time spent together seeking the Lord and learning Scripture.

Paul walked with two to three men at all times. He always had at least one other person with him, and preferred to have more than one when doing ministry. Walking with other men in sincerity and godliness resulted in Paul being able to say, "Imitate me." This was no boast. He lived this thing. He walked by the threefold cord principle, and this resulted in power and enabling to live as a disciple. We need to live this way as disciples of Jesus.

God Himself lives this way. The Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit, living from the beginning and eternally in a love relationship that is unbroken, rooted in commitment. Amazingly, Jesus, in His High Priestly prayer in John 17, invited us to be part of that forever covenant between He and the Father. And Jesus invites us, those who are spotless and blameless at His coming, to be His bride at the close of the age.

It's the 2 Tim 2:2 principle – disciples making disciples who make disciples, and on and on. Do this where you are. You can build a Church for the Lord where you are. When you have grown so that you have reached six people like this, designate a pastor (or you be the pastor) and an apprentice (pastor in learning) and start meeting weekly or biweekly as a Cell. Don't stop the CORE groups, but add the Cell as another gathering. From the CORE groups, you as a Church will feed the Cells. As a Cell gets to around 12 people, multiply it to two Cells. The pastor in training then becomes the pastor of the second Cell and each pastor designates an apprentice. Since everyone is a disciple, you should have no shortage of leaders to pastor the Cells.

Continue to build until you have a thriving Cell church. You never need a building. If you decide as a group to buy one and you can pay cash for it, fine. But do not make it the center of your activities as a Church. The center of your activities as a Church always needs to remain the disciple groups and the Cells. Remember, the early Church was a thriving, overcoming, growing power-house of God's love and anointing until Constantine made buildings and designated clergy. Within a few generations of Constantine, the Church had lost the bulk of its anointing and power and was easily corrupted. Buildings *are not inherently evil*, but making a building the center of activity for the Church *is evil*. Having a clergy *is not evil* per se, but only allowing the clergy to do the work of ministry *is evil*. Don't squelch the Holy Spirit who does the work with every joint which supplies. Don't hinder God from pouring His anointing on *every person* in the Church. You need to empower *everyone* to build God's Kingdom. *Everyone* is a minister in God's church; there are no spectators in the house of the living God. *Everyone* does the work of service. And the work of service is taking care of God's sheep and making disciples, not the upkeep on a building or paying the salary of professional clergy. Your goal is to minister to *every person* so that if you and all the leadership were killed and the rest scattered, they could go out and build churches just like you did.

The vision is simple: Disciples meet as CORE groups (three or four people), making other disciples who can make disciples. This feeds the Cell Church, which has no professional clergy and needs no building. The Cell Church is run by the senior pastors (the elders, or Bishops) who are gifted men and women with a deep commitment to serving God's people and a long track record of making disciples. Leadership equips everyone (no exceptions) to do the work of ministry. All this is voluntary and needs no substantial budget to maintain. It might take a long time to get off the ground, but there are no professional pastors and no buildings, so you have the time to experiment and learn.

*This is the Biblical template for building the Kingdom of God.*

*"As you go, make disciples of all culture groups."*

Matthew 17:1-2 (WEB)

1. After six days, **Jesus took with him Peter, James, and John** his brother, and brought them up into a high mountain by themselves.
2. He was changed before them. His face shone like the sun, and his garments became as white as the light.

Mark 9:2 (WEB)

2. After six days **Jesus took with him Peter, James, and John**, and brought them up onto a high mountain privately by themselves, and he was changed into another form in front of them.

Mark 13:3 (WEB)

3. As he sat on the Mount of Olives opposite the temple, **Peter, James, John, and Andrew** asked him privately,

Mark 14:33 (WEB)

33. He took with him **Peter, James, and John**, and began to be greatly troubled and distressed.

Acts 17:14-15 (WEB)

14. Then the brothers immediately sent out **Paul** to go as far as to the sea, and **Silas and Timothy** still stayed there.

15. But those who escorted Paul brought him as far as Athens. Receiving a **commandment to Silas and Timothy that they should come to him very quickly**, they departed.

1 Thessalonians 1:1 (WEB)

1. **Paul, Silvanus, and Timothy**, to the assembly of the Thessalonians in God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ: Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

2 Thessalonians 1:1 (WEB)

1. **Paul, Silvanus, and Timothy**, to the assembly of the Thessalonians in God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ:

John 14:10-11 (WEB)

10. Don't you believe that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? The words that I tell you, I speak not from myself; but the Father who lives in me does his works.

11. Believe me that **I am in the Father, and the Father in me**; or else believe me for the very works' sake.

John 17:21-23 (WEB)

21. that **they may all be one**; even as **you, Father, are in me, and I in you**, that **they also may be one in us**; that the world may believe that you sent me.

22. The **glory which you have given me, I have given to them; that they may be one, even as we are one**;

23. **I in them, and you in me, that they may be perfected into one**; that the world may know that you sent me and loved them, even as you loved me.

## 1.2.2 Why is discipleship important?

### 1.2.2.1 Results

Consider the following.



```

ival = 1
ctr = 1
while ctr <= 21:
    print ival
    ctr = ctr + 1
    ival = ival * 2
1
2
4
8
16
32
64
128
256
512
1024
2048
4096
8192
16384
32768
65536
131072
262144
524288
1048576

```

The first six lines is a very simple python script which starts with a number, `ival = 1`, and duplicates it 21 times. The value of `ival` is over one million after 21 duplications. Why is this important? Well, say you commit your life to working with people to make disciples, like Jesus commanded. And you commit yourself to lead one person to the Lord every year. Furthermore you commit yourself to working with that one person and bring him or her to a place where they are committed and able to do the same with one person per year. If everyone is faithful to this call, at the end of 21 years, over one Million people will be committed disciples in God's kingdom. If you continue this process for 32 years, and everyone is faithful to reach one per year for the entire time, you will have almost 4.3 Billion disciples who are committed to reaching one person each year and equipping them to do the same.

Clearly, this method of evangelism is superior to anything that is being used now. Why aren't we all doing this? Because to do this, everyone has to live like a disciple. Everyone has to be committed to reaching one person per year, to training that one person so he or she can go and do likewise. Everyone has to abandon all other "ministry" and do this one thing. Simply put, this is hard. It must be a lifestyle rooted in the deepest commitment to obey Jesus. Anyone who would rather live their own life than the life Jesus wants them to live will not live this way. And anyone who would be part of a typical modern Church will be pulled into "ministry" which has little or nothing to do with making disciples.

"This isn't realistic," you might say. That may be true. After all, even if you do this, not everyone you reach for Jesus is going to be willing to follow this pattern. Some people you reach will be content to come to a Church meeting, be fed, do simple "ministry" and grow fat on God's word. For a person to live as a disciple, they may actually have to give up some of the activities of the local Church, activities they have been part of for a long time. This is not always an easy thing to commit to. Discipleship is long term. It takes considerable effort, and it takes many years to really start seeing fruit. Discipleship is an investment.

Think about it, though. Even if you reach only one person every other year who is willing to live this way, together you can reach a million people in just over 40 years. If you reached one person every three years willing to live this way, and they all did the same, you could reach over a million soon after you are eligible to retirement benefits in most countries in the world. Also, you can believe God to reach more than one person per year. You can believe God that at least one of those you reach will commit themselves to this approach. If everyone who said they were a Christian committed themselves to this lifestyle, and it took each of them 10 years to learn how to do this, and they reached one person every five years who was willing to do the same thing, we could still reach the world in four or five generations.

Thirty fold or sixty fold disciples (Mt 13:8; Mk 4:8), those who reproduce themselves thirty or sixty times, can change a country in a few generations using this Biblical template. Hundred fold disciples can change a continent in half-a-dozen generations. They will probably not be around to see it happen, because it is long term and the return is not immediate, but their children or grandchildren can see it.

### 1.2.2.2 The world is in desperate need

We have two issues of concern here as disciples.

1. The world desperately needs Jesus. Hence, the world needs disciples of Jesus.
2. The modern Church is failing to produce believers who are disciples of Jesus.

### Why the world needs Jesus

John 6:35 (WEB)

35. Jesus said to them, "I am the **bread of life**. Whoever comes to me will **not be hungry**, and whoever believes in me will **never be thirsty**."

John 4:10 (WEB)

10. Jesus answered her, "If you knew the gift of God, and who it is who says to you, 'Give me a drink,' you would have asked him, and he would have given you **living water**."

1 Corinthians 10:4 (WEB)

4. and all drank the same spiritual drink. For they **drank of a spiritual rock** that followed them, and the rock was **Christ**.

Revelation 22:13 (WEB)

13. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last, the **Beginning** and the **End**.

John 3:16 (WEB)

16. For God so loved the world, that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever **believes in him should not perish, but have eternal life**.

Jesus is the source of all life. Our spiritual food and drink comes from Him and from being filled with His Spirit. He is the Alpha and Omega, the one who was here from the beginning. The Father sent Him so we would not perish but have eternal life.

John 14:6 (WEB)

6. Jesus said to him, "I am the **way**, the **truth**, and the **life**. No one comes to the Father, **except through me**."

John 8:12 (WEB)

12. Again, therefore, Jesus spoke to them, saying, "I am the **light of the world**. He who follows me will not walk in the darkness, but will have the light of life."

John 10:11 (WEB)

11. I am the **good shepherd**. The good shepherd lays down his life for the sheep.

Jesus is the way (the only way), the truth (the only truth) and the life (the only source of life). We do not get to God except through Him. He is the light of the world, the only source of light in our lives. Without Him, we walk in darkness. He is the Good Shepherd who lays down His life for the sheep.

Philippians 2:9-11 (WEB)

9. Therefore **God** also highly **exalted him**, and gave to him the name which is above every name,

10. that **at the name of Jesus every knee should bow**, of those in heaven, those on earth, and those under the earth,

11. and that every tongue should **confess that Jesus Christ is Lord**, to the glory of God the Father.

Every knee will bow to Jesus, and every tongue will confess that He is Lord.

Job 19:25 (WEB)

25. But as for me, I know that **my Redeemer lives**. In the end, he will stand upon the earth.

1 Thessalonians 1:10 (WEB)

10. and to **wait for his Son** from heaven, whom he raised from the dead: **Jesus, who delivers us from the wrath to come**.

Jesus is our redeemer, sent by the Father, who delivers us from the wrath to come.

### The world needs disciples

2 Corinthians 5:20 (WEB)

20. We are therefore **ambassadors on behalf of Christ**, as though God were entreating by us: we beg you on behalf of Christ, **be reconciled to God**.

Ephesians 2:10 (WEB)

10. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for **good works**, which God prepared before that we would walk in them.

1 Peter 2:9 (WEB)

9. But you are a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for God's own possession, that you may **proclaim the excellence of him** who called you out of darkness into his marvelous light.

We represent Jesus to the world. We have been created in Jesus for good works. We are called to proclaim the excellence of Jesus who called us into his marvelous light.

Ephesians 4:1-3 (WEB)

1. I therefore, the prisoner in the Lord, beg you to **walk worthily of the calling** with which you were called,

2. with all lowliness and humility, with patience, bearing with one another in love,

3. being eager to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

1 Peter 1:13-17 (WEB)

13. Therefore **prepare your minds for action**. **Be sober**, and set your hope fully on the grace that will be brought to you at the revelation of Jesus Christ—

14. as children of obedience, not conforming yourselves according to your former lusts as in your ignorance,

15. but just as he who called you is holy, you yourselves also **be holy in all of your behavior**;

16. because it is written, "You shall be holy; for I am holy."

17. If you call on him as Father, who without respect of persons judges according to each man's work, pass the time of your living as **foreigners** here in **reverent fear**,

Luke 15:1-7 (WEB)

1. Now all the tax collectors and sinners were coming close to him to hear him.

2. The Pharisees and the scribes murmured, saying, "This man welcomes sinners, and eats with them."

3. He told them this parable.

4. "Which of you men, if you had one hundred sheep, and lost one of them, wouldn't **leave the ninety-nine in the wilderness, and go after the one that was lost**, until he found it?"

5. When he has found it, he carries it on his shoulders, rejoicing.

6. When he comes home, he calls together his friends and his neighbors, saying to them, 'Rejoice with me, for **I have found my sheep which was lost!**'

7. I tell you that even so there will be **more joy in heaven over one sinner who repents, than over ninety-nine righteous people who need no repentance**.

The world desperately needs us as disciples to walk worthy of the calling with which we are called. The world needs us to live in a holy and sober manner, as foreigners on earth, in holy fear. The world desperately needs us to leave the ninety-nine in the wilderness and go after the lost one.

Galatians 3:28 (WEB)

28. There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor free man, there is neither male nor female; for **you are all one in Christ Jesus**.

The world always strives for equality and justice. However, there is no equality or justice without Jesus.

**The Church is failing to make disciples of Jesus** The modern Church standard for success is not very spiritual. We are concerned with attendance, square footage, and income figures. But God's standard for success is a commitment to depth and growth in the people. The Church is not building individuals whose goal is to be a committed follower of Jesus.

The Church needs to emphasize the following:

- Complete submission to the Holy Spirit.
- Hearts sensitive to sin, wounded every time they offend or hurt the Holy Spirit.
- Commitment to building a lasting and life-changing community along with other disciples.
- Selfless compassion toward those in need.
- Engagement in organic evangelism - sharing in unforced and natural ways, as a lifestyle.
- Living differently because of our faith.
- Display and live a lifestyle of loving, caring, focused and clear-minded pursuit of God.
- Use gifts and skills for the benefit of others.

George Barna said the following: "Without buildings, budgets, programs, curricula, or mass media, they built the foundations for what has become the world's most prolific faith group."<sup>3</sup>

- Instead of building complete and competent followers of Jesus who can reproduce, the modern Church builds people dependent on pastors and leaders.
- Instead of being and reproducing spiritually mature zealots for Jesus, and teaching that spiritual growth is central to Christianity, we are building perennial children who don't overcome sin because they believe the gospel says only that Christ forgives us of our sin.<sup>4</sup>
- Instead of building people who live a lifestyle of following and being like Jesus, the modern Church builds a culture focused on the latest songs, the latest social justice program, and the latest fund.
- Instead of teaching people that grace is an enabling that you can render futile in your own life by living in sin, the Modern Church de-emphasizes the overcoming lifestyle.
- Instead of teaching people to reproduce disciples who can reproduce disciples, the modern Church shackles people to staring at the back of heads every week.
- Instead of building people with a changed lifestyle, a changed future and a changed worldview, the modern Church builds spiritual children with a changed vocabulary designed to defend themselves from the truth.
- Instead of teaching people how to bear fruit, the modern Church teaches people how to give to the building fund or some other fund and believe they have done their duty.

The calling of the Church is not just to evangelism, but to discipleship. Evangelism is a small, though important, part of discipleship.

Again, here I am ranting against the modern church. I realize that I stand in danger of suffering the fate of Ralph Neighor<sup>5</sup>, who apologized for doing so in language that was too strong. However, I believe his criticisms of most modern churches were correct and appropriate. In fact, I don't believe he went far enough in his willingness to revert back to a pre-Constantine church organization. Our modern church structure is rooted in medieval thinking, not first century church thinking. The organization of worship, the priesthood and the buildings was based on Pagan

<sup>3</sup>George Barna, *Growing true disciples*, p.12

<sup>4</sup>This is a false gospel, by the way. Christ does forgive, but then He tells us to go and sin no more.

<sup>5</sup>Ralph Neighor *Where do we go from here*

ideals, not on the template provided by the early Church. The house of God is no longer a temple built by hands; the house of God is His people. Because of our structure, we have lost much of what the Holy Spirit intended. If the Holy Spirit were removed completely, many churches could continue to function as they are.

Biblically, how is this okay?

It is something God never intended for His church. I believe God is going to change the modern Church to return to the beginning, to what we were when all or almost all believers were true disciples. As He dealt with the Church in Laodicea, the lukewarm Church, God will deal with us. The answer, of course, is simple but difficult, like most solid Biblical truth.

Repent.

Don't push back on the truth. Don't worship the wineskin – this is idolatry. Don't keep trying the same old and expecting different results. Turn back to what we had before Constantine built pagan-like chapels, designated pagan-like clergy, and robbed Christianity of the Spirit-filled life and power it was meant to have. Be zealous, and repent.

Revelation 3:17-19 (WEB)

17. Because you say, '**I am rich**, and have gotten riches, and **have need of nothing**;' and don't know that **you are the wretched one, miserable, poor, blind, and naked**;

18. I counsel you to buy from me **gold refined by fire**, that you may become rich; and **white garments**, that you may clothe yourself, and that the shame of your nakedness may not be revealed; and **eye salve to anoint your eyes**, that you may see.

19. As many as I love, I reprove and chasten. Be **zealous** therefore, and **repent**.

Now, compare this to John 21:15-19:

John 21:15-19 (WEB)

15. So when they had eaten their breakfast, Jesus said to Simon Peter, "Simon, son of Jonah, **do you love me** more than these?" He said to him, "Yes, Lord; you know that I have affection for you." He said to him, "**Feed my lambs**."

16. He said to him again a second time, "Simon, son of Jonah, **do you love me**?" He said to him, "Yes, Lord; you know that I have affection for you." He said to him, "**Tend my sheep**."

17. He said to him the third time, "Simon, son of Jonah, **do you have affection for me**?" Peter was grieved because he asked him the third time, "Do you have affection for me?" He said to him, "Lord, you know everything. You know that I have affection for you." Jesus said to him, "**Feed my sheep**."

18. Most certainly I tell you, when you were young, you dressed yourself and walked where you wanted to. But when you are old, you will stretch out your hands, and another will dress you and carry you where you don't want to go."

19. Now he said this, **signifying by what kind of death he would glorify God**. When he had said this, he said to him, "**Follow me**."

Here in John 21 we see Jesus restoring Peter. This might seem harsh, like Jesus was mean to Peter, but the man needed to be restored. These are the things Jesus did to restore him:

- He gave him an opportunity to speak what was in his heart.  
*Do you love me? Lord, you know I love you.*
- He restored him to the calling he had before he fell.  
*Feed my sheep; tend my lambs*
- He set his focus back in the direction in which he was called, the direction he needed to pursue.  
*You will die as I did if you follow me. Follow me.*

In Revelation, the lukewarm church is to buy three things.

- Gold refined by fire.  
Gold is pure character in the heart of a person. Jesus brought Peter to speak what was in his heart. The *gold* of a disciple's heart was there, but Peter had denied Jesus three times, and he needed to speak what he knew in his heart he believed three times.

- White garments.  
White garments are righteous acts of the saints, or good works. Peter was called to shepherd the sheep of Jesus. Jesus focused him on that calling, one time for each time he denied Jesus.
- Eye salve to anoint their eyes.  
Jesus gave Peter direction, a clear path to follow. Jesus turned Peter's head and focused his eyes on the direction he needed to walk, in essence healing his eyes.

The modern Church needs to be restored. The modern Church needs gold refined by fire, the heart of a disciple. The church needs white garments, righteous acts of obedience, to love and serve God and people, like Jesus commanded. Finally, the church needs to move in the direction in which Jesus is moving, and do what He said. We need to make disciples, even if it costs us everything.

In fairness, there *are* churches where discipleship is emphasized. They are, overall, the hope for the future of Christianity. And even in churches where discipleship is not emphasized, there are good-hearted pastors and leaders who seek the Lord. However, the structure of how we build now is broken. I believe that God is going to remove the money motive from the Church. God is going to remove "building" focus from the Church. God is going to take us out of buildings and put us in the homes and lives of people, where we belong. God is going to remove from us the awe and desire to have someone stand between us and Him – the Exodus 20:19<sup>6</sup> syndrome – and all will do the work of ministry. God is going to make us all ministers and empower all of us to build His Kingdom. Those who refuse this movement and continue to live the lifestyle of churches as they are now will do so without the Holy Spirit at some point in the future. This is my conviction, and this is the operating assumption which compels me to do the work of making disciples.

The failures of the modern church get even worse. Consider the following:

- Six out of ten believers have no sense of what they want to achieve or become.
- Modern believers overall lack a passion to be godly and to grow.
- Many modern believers do not know what the Scriptures teach.
- Most (63%) believe Jesus committed sin when He was on earth.
- Most (60%) believe Jesus did not return from death to life physically.
- Most (62%) believe the Holy Spirit is not a living entity.
- Most (60%) believe there are no sins that God will not forgive.
- Only 53% of Christians believe that people who do not accept Jesus as Lord and Savior will be condemned to hell.
- The majority of believers claim there is no such thing as the Holy Spirit or Satan.
- Few Churches or Christians have a clear, measurable definition of spiritual success.
- We have defined discipleship as head knowledge, not complete transformation.
- Churches teach people in random rather than systematic ways.
- Modern Church goes reject accountability. "Don't judge me." This is a popular meme among modern Christians, especially young ones.
- The Church promotes programs rather than people, causes rather than committed disciples.
- Church leaders are, overall, not zealous about the spiritual development of people.
- Churches divert their best leaders to "ministries" and "causes" rather than to discipleship.

Now, as I have said, these criticisms don't apply to all churches. However, they clearly apply to most churches, particularly churches in the United States. And this is a devastating indictment against these churches. I strongly recommend that you read George Barna's book.<sup>7</sup> It is truly eye opening.

<sup>6</sup>In Ex 19:5-6, God laid out a covenant of noble service; in Ex 20:19, the people of Israel relegated themselves to a covenant of base servitude.

<sup>7</sup>*Growing True Disciples*, George Barna, 2001

### 1.2.2.3 No plan B

Discipleship is the plan according to the Bible.

Making disciples who can make disciples is the template for building the Kingdom.

There is no plan B.

Jesus commanded us to make disciples everywhere we go, and He expects us to make disciples everywhere we go. This is the template that the Lord laid out clearly in the New Testament. When He sent His twelve and then sent the seventy, He gave them instructions which only make sense if they were called to make disciples. This is what the early Church did. That's why the gospel message spread when persecution drove people other than the apostles out of Jerusalem. This is what Paul and Barnabas did on their first missionary journey, and it is what Paul did on subsequent missionary journeys with Silas, Silvanus, Timothy and Luke.

Biblically, there is no out. Everyone who names the name of Jesus is commanded to do this and should be committed to do this. You should live this way, you should encourage and teach others to live this way, and you should give yourself to this cause until you breath your last breath. No teaching from any modern church or religious leader will divorce this responsibility from you before God, no matter how sincere.

Does this sound extreme to you? By the standards of modern Christianity it probably is. The apostles of Jesus in the first generation of the Church lived this way, and that's why there were millions, maybe tens of millions, of true disciples in North Africa, the Middle East, Asia and Europe within two hundred years of Christ. We as modern church goers are so concerned about digging water wells in Africa (which, granted, is a good thing) that we don't trouble ourselves to teach people how to attain the water of life for themselves. If we just had the hunger level and the commitment of the woman at the well in John chapter 4, we could bring the world under the rule of Christ in less time than the US has been a nation.

Jesus is our Lord. This is what He wants.

As for me and my oikos, His desire is our command. We will live this way.

What about you?

The goal of this work is to provide instructions and guidelines to help you do what the Lord commands.

## 1.3 Master plan of evangelism

There is a book written by Robert E. Coleman called the *Master plan of evangelism*. It is an excellent work written in the 1960s in which Mr. Coleman analyzed the plan of evangelism used by Jesus. I include a simple outline of this book here because it dovetails well with the whole concept of disciple-making and that being the emphasis of Jesus in the New Testament. I strongly recommend you read this book.

### 1.3.1 Jesus chose His disciples

Jesus chose unlearned and ignorant men.

Acts 4:13 (WEB)

13. Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and had perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marveled. They recognized that they had been with Jesus.

These were men who were fed up with the hypocrisy of the ruling aristocracy.

John 1:35 (WEB)

35. Again, the next day, John was standing with two of his disciples,

Jesus concentrated on a few. He was deliberate with how He proportioned His life to those He wanted to train. He didn't pray for the world, but for those He would leave in the world.

John 17:6 (WEB)

6. I revealed your name to the people whom you have given me out of the world. They were yours, and you have given them to me. They have kept your word.

John 17:9 (WEB)

9. I pray for them. I don't pray for the world, but for those whom you have given me, for they are yours.

He didn't neglect the masses, but He emphasized a few. Even those gathered in the upper room to be filled with the Holy Spirit on the Day of Pentacost were few, considering he had been with them for three years and had major success with the multitudes.

Jesus was not trying to impress the crowd, but to usher in a Kingdom. He needed to build disciples who could meet the needs of the multitudes.

Mark 6:34 (WEB)

34. Jesus came out, saw a great multitude, and he had compassion on them, because they were like sheep without a shepherd, and he began to teach them many things.

Matthew 9:36 (WEB)

36. But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion for them, because they were harassed and scattered, like sheep without a shepherd.

Matthew 14:14 (WEB)

14. Jesus went out, and he saw a great multitude. He had compassion on them, and healed their sick.

Jesus was intent on building competent men to lead the multitudes. These men would have to work around the spiritually blind leaders of the Jews, who dominated the affairs of the people.

John 8:44 (WEB)

44. You are of your father, the devil, and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and doesn't stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks on his own; for he is a liar, and the father of lies.

John 9:39-41 (WEB)

39. Jesus said, "I came into this world for judgment, that those who don't see may see; and that those who see may become blind."

40. Those of the Pharisees who were with him heard these things, and said to him, "Are we also blind?"

41. Jesus said to them, "If you were blind, you would have no sin; but now you say, 'We see.' Therefore your sin remains.

John 12:40 (WEB)

40. "He has blinded their eyes and he hardened their heart, lest they should see with their eyes, and perceive with their heart, and would turn, and I would heal them."

Communism uses this method of building leaders who are then sent out to lead to build movements. This method works regardless of the message or who tries it.

### 1.3.2 Jesus associated with His disciples

He stayed with them.

Matthew 28:20 (WEB)

20. teaching them to observe all things that I commanded you. Behold, I am with you always, even to the end of the age." Amen.

Jesus called them to follow Him that they might be with Him.

Mark 3:14 (WEB)

14. He appointed twelve, that they might be with him, and that he might send them out to preach,

Luke 6:13 (WEB)

13. When it was day, he called his disciples, and from them he chose twelve, whom he also named apostles:

He spent more time with His disciples than with everyone else in the world put together. This is not to say he neglected the masses, whom He ministered to regularly. Jesus expects us to do the same with people, to spend the time necessary with them to see them become all they can be. Preaching to the masses is not enough.



### 1.3.3 Jesus set them apart for the call

Matthew 11:29 (WEB)

29. Take my yoke upon you, and learn from me, for I am gentle and humble in heart; and you will find rest for your souls.

Jesus expected His men to follow Him and obey Him. To follow Jesus is simple at first. However, it means the surrender of one's whole life to the Master. There is room for no compromise.

Luke 16:13 (WEB)

13. No servant can serve two masters, for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to one, and despise the other. You aren't able to serve God and Mammon."

He taught them to walk in personal righteousness in the Sermon on the mount, forsaking sin completely and conforming the old thoughts, habits and pleasures to the Kingdom of God. The perfection of love was His standard.

Matthew 5:48 (WEB)

48. Therefore you shall be perfect, just as your Father in heaven is perfect.

This love brought obedience.

John 14:21 (WEB)

21. One who has my commandments and keeps them, that person is one who loves me. One who loves me will be loved by my Father, and I will love him, and will reveal myself to him."

John 14:23 (WEB)

23. Jesus answered him, "If a man loves me, he will keep my word. My Father will love him, and we will come to him, and make our home with him.

The willing denial of the self was the cross Jesus required all disciples to bear.

Mark 8:34-38 (WEB)

34. He called the multitude to himself with his disciples, and said to them, "Whoever wants to come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

35. For whoever wants to save his life will lose it; and whoever will lose his life for my sake and the sake of the Good News will save it.

36. For what does it profit a man, to gain the whole world, and forfeit his life?

37. For what will a man give in exchange for his life?

38. For whoever will be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation, the Son of Man also will be ashamed of him, when he comes in his Father's glory, with the holy angels."

Matthew 16:24-26 (WEB)

24. Then Jesus said to his disciples, "If anyone desires to come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

25. For whoever desires to save his life will lose it, and whoever will lose his life for my sake will find it.

26. For what will it profit a man, if he gains the whole world, and forfeits his life? Or what will a man give in exchange for his life?

Luke 9:23-25 (WEB)

23. He said to all, "If anyone desires to come after me, let him deny himself, take up his cross, and follow me.

24. For whoever desires to save his life will lose it, but whoever will lose his life for my sake, will save it.

25. For what does it profit a man if he gains the whole world, and loses or forfeits his own self?

John 12:25-26 (WEB)

25. He who loves his life will lose it. He who hates his life in this world will keep it to eternal life.

26. If anyone serves me, let him follow me. Where I am, there my servant will also be. If anyone serves me, the Father will honor him.

This was a strong teaching, and not everyone could take it.

John 6:66 (WEB)

66. At this, many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.

Jesus did not go running after those who left. He was training His to build a Kingdom, and it would take total commitment to do so.

Those who walked with Him were encouraged to count the cost. To follow Him meant to turn loose of the world.

Matthew 8:19-22 (WEB)

19. A scribe came, and said to him, "Teacher, I will follow you wherever you go."

20. Jesus said to him, "The foxes have holes, and the birds of the sky have nests, but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay his head."

21. Another of his disciples said to him, "Lord, allow me first to go and bury my father."

22. But Jesus said to him, "Follow me, and leave the dead to bury their own dead."

Luke 9:26 (WEB)

26. For whoever will be ashamed of me and of my words, of him will the Son of Man be ashamed, when he comes in his glory, and the glory of the Father, and of the holy angels.

Luke 14:28 (WEB)

28. For which of you, desiring to build a tower, doesn't first sit down and count the cost, to see if he has enough to complete it?

Luke 14:33 (WEB)

33. So therefore whoever of you who doesn't renounce all that he has, he can't be my disciple.

Mark 10:21 (WEB)

21. Jesus looking at him loved him, and said to him, "One thing you lack. Go, sell whatever you have, and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven; and come, follow me, taking up the cross."

Matthew 19:21 (WEB)

21. Jesus said to him, "If you want to be perfect, go, sell what you have, and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven; and come, follow me."

Luke 18:22 (WEB)

22. When Jesus heard these things, he said to him, "You still lack one thing. Sell all that you have, and distribute it to the poor. Then you will have treasure in heaven; then come, follow me."

When Jesus asks if we are going to leave Him because of this requirement, there is only one appropriate answer:

John 6:67-69 (WEB)

67. Jesus said therefore to the twelve, "You don't also want to go away, do you?"

68. Simon Peter answered him, "Lord, to whom would we go? You have the words of eternal life.

69. We have come to believe and know that you are the Christ, the Son of the living God."

This consecration was necessary in those whom He raised up. Obedience is the proof of love.

John 14:15 (WEB)

15. If you love me, keep my commandments.

John 14:21 (WEB)

21. One who has my commandments and keeps them, that person is one who loves me. One who loves me will be loved by my Father, and I will love him, and will reveal myself to him."

John 14:23 (WEB)

23. Jesus answered him, "If a man loves me, he will keep my word. My Father will love him, and we will come to him, and make our home with him.

John 14:24 (WEB)

24. He who doesn't love me doesn't keep my words. The word which you hear isn't mine, but the Father's who sent me.

Jesus demonstrated this in His own life.

John 4:34 (WEB)

34. Jesus said to them, "My food is to do the will of him who sent me and to accomplish his work.

John 5:30 (WEB)

30. I can of myself do nothing. As I hear, I judge, and my judgment is righteous; because I don't seek my own will, but the will of my Father who sent me.

John 6:38 (WEB)

38. For I have come down from heaven, not to do my own will, but the will of him who sent me.

John 15:10 (WEB)

10. If you keep my commandments, you will remain in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and remain in his love.

John 17:4 (WEB)

4. I glorified you on the earth. I have accomplished the work which you have given me to do.

Luke 22:42 (WEB)

42. saying, "Father, if you are willing, remove this cup from me. Nevertheless, not my will, but yours, be done."

Mark 14:36 (WEB)

36. He said, "Abba, Father, all things are possible to you. Please remove this cup from me. However, not what I desire, but what you desire."

Matthew 26:39 (WEB)

39. He went forward a little, fell on his face, and prayed, saying, "My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass away from me; nevertheless, not what I desire, but what you desire."

Matthew 26:42 (WEB)

42. Again, a second time he went away, and prayed, saying, "My Father, if this cup can't pass away from me unless I drink it, your desire be done."

Matthew 26:44 (WEB)

44. He left them again, went away, and prayed a third time, saying the same words.

This cross, accepted in advance by Jesus, made each step on earth a conscious acceptance of God's eternal purpose for His life.

John 13:15-16 (WEB)

15. For I have given you an example, that you should also do as I have done to you.

16. Most certainly I tell you, a servant is not greater than his lord, neither is one who is sent greater than he who sent him.

Luke 17:6-10 (WEB)

6. The Lord said, "If you had faith like a grain of mustard seed, you would tell this sycamore tree, 'Be uprooted, and be planted in the sea,' and it would obey you.

7. But who is there among you, having a servant plowing or keeping sheep, that will say when he comes in from the field, 'Come immediately and sit down at the table,'

8. and will not rather tell him, 'Prepare my supper, clothe yourself properly, and serve me, while I eat and drink. Afterward you shall eat and drink'?

9. Does he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded? I think not.

10. Even so you also, when you have done all the things that are commanded you, say, 'We are unworthy servants. We have done our duty.'"

Luke 8:21 (WEB)

21. But he answered them, “My mother and my brothers are these who hear the word of God, and do it.”

Mark 3:35 (WEB)

35. For whoever does the will of God is my brother, my sister, and mother.”

Matthew 12:50 (WEB)

50. For whoever does the will of my Father who is in heaven, he is my brother, and sister, and mother.”

This was absolutely necessary to mold the lives of the disciples. These were to be men who would lead His church to conquest; to lead, they had to learn to follow.

Obedience, even the obedience of the cross, is necessary to receive all God has for us.

### 1.3.4 Jesus gave the Spirit

Jesus lived a life of Giving. He gave away what the Father had given Him.

John 15:15 (WEB)

15. No longer do I call you servants, for the servant doesn't know what his lord does. But I have called you friends, for everything that I heard from my Father, I have made known to you.

John 17:4 (WEB)

4. I glorified you on the earth. I have accomplished the work which you have given me to do.

John 17:8 (WEB)

8. for the words which you have given me I have given to them, and they received them, and knew for sure that I came from you. They have believed that you sent me.

John 17:14 (WEB)

14. I have given them your word. The world hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

He gave them His peace.

John 16:33 (WEB)

33. I have told you these things, that in me you may have peace. In the world you have trouble; but cheer up! I have overcome the world.”

He gave them His joy.

John 15:11 (WEB)

11. I have spoken these things to you, that my joy may remain in you, and that your joy may be made full.

John 17:13 (WEB)

13. But now I come to you, and I say these things in the world, that they may have my joy made full in themselves.

He gave them the Keys to the Kingdom.

Matthew 16:19 (WEB)

19. I will give to you the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven, and whatever you bind on earth will have been bound in heaven; and whatever you release on earth will have been released in heaven.”

Luke 12:32 (WEB)

32. Don't be afraid, little flock, for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the Kingdom.

He gave them His own glory.

John 17:22 (WEB)

22. The glory which you have given me, I have given to them; that they may be one, even as we are one;

John 17:24 (WEB)

24. Father, I desire that they also whom you have given me be with me where I am, that they may see my glory, which you have given me, for you loved me before the foundation of the world.

Love gives itself away.

John 3:16 (WEB)

16. For God so loved the world, that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him should not perish, but have eternal life.

13. Greater love has no one than this, that someone lay down his life for his friends.

The love of Jesus drove Him to seek and save the lost. Jesus modeled the lifestyle of loving. He sanctified Himself for the sake of His disciples.

John 17:18-19 (WEB)

18. As you sent me into the world, even so I have sent them into the world.

19. For their sakes I sanctify myself, that they themselves also may be sanctified in truth.

They received freely, they were to give freely.

Matthew 10:8 (WEB)

8. Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, and cast out demons. Freely you received, so freely give.

John 13:34-35 (WEB)

34. A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another. Just as I have loved you, you also love one another.

35. By this everyone will know that you are my disciples, if you have love for one another.”

John 15:9-10 (WEB)

9. Even as the Father has loved me, I also have loved you. Remain in my love.

10. If you keep my commandments, you will remain in my love; even as I have kept my Father’s commandments, and remain in his love.

John 15:12 (WEB)

12. “This is my commandment, that you love one another, even as I have loved you.

John 15:17 (WEB)

17. “I command these things to you, that you may love one another.

Mark 12:30-31 (WEB)

30. you shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind, and with all your strength.’ This is the first commandment.

31. The second is like this, ‘You shall love your neighbor as yourself.’ There is no other commandment greater than these.”

Luke 10:27 (WEB)

27. He answered, “You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, with all your strength, and with all your mind; and your neighbor as yourself.”

This was not the work of flesh.

John 6:63 (WEB)

63. It is the spirit who gives life. The flesh profits nothing. The words that I speak to you are spirit, and are life.

John 3:3-9 (WEB)

3. Jesus answered him, “Most certainly, I tell you, unless one is born anew, he can’t see God’s Kingdom.”

4. Nicodemus said to him, “How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter a second time into his mother’s womb, and be born?”

5. Jesus answered, “Most certainly I tell you, unless one is born of water and spirit, he can’t enter into God’s Kingdom.

6. That which is born of the flesh is flesh. That which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

7. Don't marvel that I said to you, 'You must be born anew.'

8. The wind blows where it wants to, and you hear its sound, but don't know where it comes from and where it is going. So is everyone who is born of the Spirit."

9. Nicodemus answered him, "How can these things be?"

John 4:14 (WEB)

14. but whoever drinks of the water that I will give him will never thirst again; but the water that I will give him will become in him a well of water springing up to eternal life."

John 7:38-39 (WEB)

38. He who believes in me, as the Scripture has said, from within him will flow rivers of living water."

39. But he said this about the Spirit, which those believing in him were to receive. For the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus wasn't yet glorified.

John 15:3 (WEB)

3. You are already pruned clean because of the word which I have spoken to you.

John 17:17 (WEB)

17. Sanctify them in your truth. Your word is truth.

Ephesians 5:26 (WEB)

26. that he might sanctify it, having cleansed it by the washing of water with the word,

Only the Holy Spirit enables one to carry on the redemptive mission of evangelism.

18. "The Spirit of the Lord is on me, because he has anointed me to preach good news to the poor. He has sent me to heal the broken hearted, to proclaim release to the captives, recovering of sight to the blind, to deliver those who are crushed,

Matthew 12:28 (WEB)

28. But if I by the Spirit of God cast out demons, then God's Kingdom has come upon you.

John 14:12 (WEB)

12. Most certainly I tell you, he who believes in me, the works that I do, he will do also; and he will do greater works than these, because I am going to my Father.

John 16:8 (WEB)

8. When he has come, he will convict the world about sin, about righteousness, and about judgment;

Matthew 22:43 (WEB)

43. He said to them, "How then does David in the Spirit call him Lord, saying,

John 14:12 (WEB)

12. Most certainly I tell you, he who believes in me, the works that I do, he will do also; and he will do greater works than these, because I am going to my Father.

Jesus would send the Comforter.

John 14:16 (WEB)

16. I will pray to the Father, and he will give you another Counselor, that he may be with you forever:

John 16:13 (WEB)

13. However when he, the Spirit of truth, has come, he will guide you into all truth, for he will not speak from himself; but whatever he hears, he will speak. He will declare to you things that are coming.

John 14:26 (WEB)

26. But the Counselor, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, will teach you all things, and will remind you of all that I said to you.

John 14:12-13 (WEB)

12. Most certainly I tell you, he who believes in me, the works that I do, he will do also; and he will do greater works than these, because I am going to my Father.

13. Whatever you will ask in my name, I will do it, that the Father may be glorified in the Son.

John 16:23-24 (WEB)

23. “In that day you will ask me no questions. Most certainly I tell you, whatever you may ask of the Father in my name, he will give it to you.

24. Until now, you have asked nothing in my name. Ask, and you will receive, that your joy may be made full.

John 14:17 (WEB)

17. the Spirit of truth, whom the world can’t receive; for it doesn’t see him and doesn’t know him. You know him, for he lives with you, and will be in you.

The Spirit was so important, Jesus told His disciples to tarry until the promise became a reality.

Luke 24:49 (WEB)

49. Behold, I send out the promise of my Father on you. But wait in the city of Jerusalem until you are clothed with power from on high.”

Acts 1:4-5 (WEB)

4. Being assembled together with them, he commanded them, “Don’t depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which you heard from me.

5. For John indeed baptized in water, but you will be baptized in the Holy Spirit not many days from now.”

Acts 1:8 (WEB)

8. But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you. You will be witnesses to me in Jerusalem, in all Judea and Samaria, and to the uttermost parts of the earth.”

Acts 2:23 (WEB)

23. him, being delivered up by the determined counsel and foreknowledge of God, you have taken by the hand of lawless men, crucified and killed;

Those who followed Jesus completely received the Comforter. Jesus would not cast His pearls before those who don’t want them. We must have the life of Jesus in us by the Spirit if we are to reach the lost.

### 1.3.5 Jesus showed His disciples how to live

He taught them to pray.

Luke 11:1-4 (WEB)

1. When he finished praying in a certain place, one of his disciples said to him, “Lord, teach us to pray, just as John also taught his disciples.”

2. He said to them, “When you pray, say, ‘Our Father in heaven, may your name be kept holy. May your Kingdom come. May your will be done on earth, as it is in heaven.

3. Give us day by day our daily bread.

4. Forgive us our sins, for we ourselves also forgive everyone who is indebted to us. Bring us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one.’”

Matthew 6:9-13 (WEB)

9. Pray like this: ‘Our Father in heaven, may your name be kept holy.

10. Let your Kingdom come. Let your will be done on earth as it is in heaven.

11. Give us today our daily bread.

12. Forgive us our debts, as we also forgive our debtors.

13. Bring us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one. For yours is the Kingdom, the power, and the glory forever. Amen.’

He taught them to use the Scripture.

John 15:7 (WEB)

7. If you remain in me, and my words remain in you, you will ask whatever you desire, and it will be done for you.

Jesus taught them to win souls. He always taught in a natural way, so as not to obscure His lessons. We must be willing to have people imitate us, even as we imitate Jesus.

1 Corinthians 11:1 (WEB)

1. Be imitators of me, even as I also am of Christ.

Philippians 3:17 (WEB)

17. Brothers, be imitators together of me, and note those who walk this way, even as you have us for an example.

Philippians 4:9 (WEB)

9. The things which you learned, received, heard, and saw in me: do these things, and the God of peace will be with you.

1 Thessalonians 2:7 (WEB)

7. But we were gentle among you, like a nursing mother cherishes her own children.

1 Thessalonians 2:8 (WEB)

8. Even so, affectionately longing for you, we were well pleased to impart to you, not the Good News of God only, but also our own souls, because you had become very dear to us.

2 Timothy 1:13 (WEB)

13. Hold the pattern of sound words which you have heard from me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus.

Knowledge isn't enough. There comes a time for action.

### 1.3.6 Jesus delegated His work to His disciples

Jesus built with the idea that His disciples would eventually take over. Within a year Jesus chose His disciples and then He walked with them. He called them to be fishers of men, but they didn't do much men catching for a season. He gave the authority to heal sicknesses and cast out demons. Beginning His third tour of Galilee, He sent them forth.

Mark 6:6-7 (WEB)

6. He marveled because of their unbelief. He went around the villages teaching.

7. He called to himself the twelve, and began to send them out two by two; and he gave them authority over the unclean spirits.

Matthew 9:35 (WEB)

35. Jesus went about all the cities and the villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the Good News of the Kingdom, and healing every disease and every sickness among the people.

Matthew 10:5 (WEB)

5. Jesus sent these twelve out, and commanded them, saying, "Don't go among the Gentiles, and don't enter into any city of the Samaritans.

Luke 9:1-2 (WEB)

1. He called the twelve together, and gave them power and authority over all demons, and to cure diseases.

2. He sent them out to preach God's Kingdom and to heal the sick.

Jesus gave them instructions before He sent them out. Preach the Kingdom of God and heal the sick.

Matthew 10:1 (WEB)

1. He called to himself his twelve disciples, and gave them authority over unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal every disease and every sickness.

Matthew 10:8 (WEB)

8. Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, and cast out demons. Freely you received, so freely give.



Go only to Israel.

Matthew 10:5-6 (WEB)

5. Jesus sent these twelve out, and commanded them, saying, "Don't go among the Gentiles, and don't enter into any city of the Samaritans.
6. Rather, go to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

They were to go with nothing, to trust God to supply their needs.

Matthew 10:9-10 (WEB)

9. Don't take any gold, silver, or brass in your money belts.
10. Take no bag for your journey, neither two coats, nor sandals, nor staff: for the laborer is worthy of his food.

Mark 6:8-9 (WEB)

8. He commanded them that they should take nothing for their journey, except a staff only: no bread, no wallet, no money in their purse,
9. but to wear sandals, and not put on two tunics.

Luke 9:3 (WEB)

3. He said to them, "Take nothing for your journey—no staves, nor wallet, nor bread, nor money. Don't have two coats each.

Whatever village they entered, seek out a worthy house and stay there.

Matthew 10:11 (WEB)

11. Into whatever city or village you enter, find out who in it is worthy; and stay there until you go on.

Mark 6:10 (WEB)

10. He said to them, "Wherever you enter into a house, stay there until you depart from there.

Luke 9:4 (WEB)

4. Into whatever house you enter, stay there, and depart from there.

If the people rejected them or their word, they were to shake the dust of their feet off.

Matthew 10:14-15 (WEB)

14. Whoever doesn't receive you, nor hear your words, as you go out of that house or that city, shake the dust off your feet.
15. Most certainly I tell you, it will be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment than for that city.

Mark 6:11 (WEB)

11. Whoever will not receive you nor hear you, as you depart from there, shake off the dust that is under your feet for a testimony against them. Assuredly, I tell you, it will be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment than for that city!"

Luke 9:5 (WEB)

5. As many as don't receive you, when you depart from that city, shake off even the dust from your feet for a testimony against them."

They were to expect hardship, but God would never abandon them.

Matthew 10:20-23 (WEB)

20. For it is not you who speak, but the Spirit of your Father who speaks in you.
21. "Brother will deliver up brother to death, and the father his child. Children will rise up against parents, and cause them to be put to death.
22. You will be hated by all men for my name's sake, but he who endures to the end will be saved.
23. But when they persecute you in this city, flee into the next, for most certainly I tell you, you will not have gone through the cities of Israel until the Son of Man has come.

The true gospel is divisive, because there could be no compromise with sin. People who want to continue in sin will struggle with the truth of the Gospel.

Matthew 10:34-38 (WEB)

34. "Don't think that I came to send peace on the earth. I didn't come to send peace, but a sword.
35. For I came to set a man at odds against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law.
36. A man's foes will be those of his own household.
37. He who loves father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and he who loves son or daughter more than me isn't worthy of me.
38. He who doesn't take his cross and follow after me, isn't worthy of me.

Jesus gave them His own authority and power to do the work.

Mark 6:7 (WEB)

7. He called to himself the twelve, and began to send them out two by two; and he gave them authority over the unclean spirits.

Matthew 10:1 (WEB)

1. He called to himself his twelve disciples, and gave them authority over unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal every disease and every sickness.

Luke 9:1 (WEB)

1. He called the twelve together, and gave them power and authority over all demons, and to cure diseases.

The disciples represented Jesus. Whoever received them received Jesus, and whoever didn't receive them didn't receive Jesus or the Father who sent Jesus.

Matthew 10:40 (WEB)

40. He who receives you receives me, and he who receives me receives him who sent me.

John 13:20 (WEB)

20. Most certainly I tell you, he who receives whomever I send, receives me; and he who receives me, receives him who sent me."

Jesus sent them out two by two.

Mark 6:7 (WEB)

7. He called to himself the twelve, and began to send them out two by two; and he gave them authority over the unclean spirits.

Soon after He sent the twelve out, Jesus sent the seventy. The only difference in instruction was they were to go to the places where He would go.

Luke 10:1 (WEB)

1. Now after these things, the Lord also appointed seventy others, and sent them two by two ahead of him into every city and place where he was about to come.

After Jesus died and was resurrected, He sent His disciples out. He met with them on at least four occasions. He assured them the Holy Spirit would be with them. He gave the Great Commission not just to the twelve, but to the 500 who were there with Him. He went over the whole thing with them for the last time. They were to go to Jerusalem and remain there until they were filled with the Holy Spirit. From there, they would start the work and continue it to the whole creation.

John 20:21 (WEB)

21. Jesus therefore said to them again, "Peace be to you. As the Father has sent me, even so I send you."

1 Corinthians 15:6 (WEB)

6. Then he appeared to over five hundred brothers at once, most of whom remain until now, but some have also fallen asleep.

Matthew 28:16 (WEB)

16. But the eleven disciples went into Galilee, to the mountain where Jesus had sent them.

Matthew 28:18-20 (WEB)

18. Jesus came to them and spoke to them, saying, “All authority has been given to me in heaven and on earth.

19. Go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit,

20. teaching them to observe all things that I commanded you. Behold, I am with you always, even to the end of the age.” Amen.

Mark 16:15-18 (WEB)

15. He said to them, “Go into all the world, and preach the Good News to the whole creation.

16. He who believes and is baptized will be saved; but he who disbelieves will be condemned.

17. These signs will accompany those who believe: in my name they will cast out demons; they will speak with new languages;

18. they will take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it will in no way hurt them; they will lay hands on the sick, and they will recover.”

Luke 24:44-49 (WEB)

44. He said to them, “This is what I told you, while I was still with you, that all things which are written in the law of Moses, the prophets, and the psalms, concerning me must be fulfilled.”

45. Then he opened their minds, that they might understand the Scriptures.

46. He said to them, “Thus it is written, and thus it was necessary for the Christ to suffer and to rise from the dead the third day,

47. and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name to all the nations, beginning at Jerusalem.

48. You are witnesses of these things.

49. Behold, I send out the promise of my Father on you. But wait in the city of Jerusalem until you are clothed with power from on high.”

Acts 1:8 (WEB)

8. But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you. You will be witnesses to me in Jerusalem, in all Judea and Samaria, and to the uttermost parts of the earth.”

Disciples are sent men and women. Their job is to make disciples.

### 1.3.7 After Jesus sent the disciples out, He debriefed them

Mark 6:30 (WEB)

30. The apostles gathered themselves together to Jesus, and they told him all things, whatever they had done, and whatever they had taught.

Luke 9:10 (WEB)

10. The apostles, when they had returned, told him what things they had done. He took them and withdrew apart to a desert region of a city called Bethsaida.

Luke 10:17-18 (WEB)

17. The seventy returned with joy, saying, “Lord, even the demons are subject to us in your name!”

18. He said to them, “I saw Satan having fallen like lightning from heaven.

Luke 10:20-22 (WEB)

20. Nevertheless, don’t rejoice in this, that the spirits are subject to you, but rejoice that your names are written in heaven.”

21. In that same hour Jesus rejoiced in the Holy Spirit, and said, "I thank you, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that you have hidden these things from the wise and understanding, and revealed them to little children. Yes, Father, for so it was well-pleasing in your sight."

22. Turning to the disciples, he said, "All things have been delivered to me by my Father. No one knows who the Son is, except the Father, and who the Father is, except the Son, and he to whomever the Son desires to reveal him."

Mark 6:30 (WEB)

30. The apostles gathered themselves together to Jesus, and they told him all things, whatever they had done, and whatever they had taught.

Luke 9:10 (WEB)

10. The apostles, when they had returned, told him what things they had done. He took them and withdrew apart to a desert region of a city called Bethsaida.

Luke 10:17-18 (WEB)

17. The seventy returned with joy, saying, "Lord, even the demons are subject to us in your name!"

18. He said to them, "I saw Satan having fallen like lightning from heaven.

Luke 10:20-22 (WEB)

20. Nevertheless, don't rejoice in this, that the spirits are subject to you, but rejoice that your names are written in heaven."

21. In that same hour Jesus rejoiced in the Holy Spirit, and said, "I thank you, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that you have hidden these things from the wise and understanding, and revealed them to little children. Yes, Father, for so it was well-pleasing in your sight."

22. Turning to the disciples, he said, "All things have been delivered to me by my Father. No one knows who the Son is, except the Father, and who the Father is, except the Son, and he to whomever the Son desires to reveal him."

Jesus continued to correct and adjust the disciples as time went on. He gave them increasingly more attention as the time for Him to depart came. This same on-hand and patient work is needed in training those who are trying to raise up disciples who make disciples.

The goal of Jesus is world conquest. Lesser concerns cannot capture our strategy for a moment. Disciples must be brought to maturity. We have not been called to hold the fort but to storm the heights.

### 1.3.8 The final goal Jesus had in creating disciples was reproduction

John 15:16 (WEB)

16. You didn't choose me, but I chose you and appointed you, that you should go and bear fruit, and that your fruit should remain; that whatever you will ask of the Father in my name, he may give it to you.

John 17:21 (WEB)

21. that they may all be one; even as you, Father, are in me, and I in you, that they also may be one in us; that the world may believe that you sent me.

John 17:23 (WEB)

23. I in them, and you in me, that they may be perfected into one; that the world may know that you sent me and loved them, even as you loved me.

The whole evangelistic strategy of Jesus depended on the faithfulness of His disciples. No matter how small the starting group was, if they reproduced and raised up disciples who reproduced, they would succeed.

Jesus impressed on His disciples the necessity and inevitability of life reproducing its kind.

John 15:1-17 (WEB)

1. "I am the true vine, and my Father is the farmer.

2. Every branch in me that doesn't bear fruit, he takes away. Every branch that bears fruit, he prunes, that it may bear more fruit.

3. You are already pruned clean because of the word which I have spoken to you.
4. Remain in me, and I in you. As the branch can't bear fruit by itself unless it remains in the vine, so neither can you, unless you remain in me.
5. I am the vine. You are the branches. He who remains in me and I in him bears much fruit, for apart from me you can do nothing.
6. If a man doesn't remain in me, he is thrown out as a branch and is withered; and they gather them, throw them into the fire, and they are burned.
7. If you remain in me, and my words remain in you, you will ask whatever you desire, and it will be done for you.
8. "In this my Father is glorified, that you bear much fruit; and so you will be my disciples.
9. Even as the Father has loved me, I also have loved you. Remain in my love.
10. If you keep my commandments, you will remain in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and remain in his love.
11. I have spoken these things to you, that my joy may remain in you, and that your joy may be made full.
12. "This is my commandment, that you love one another, even as I have loved you.
13. Greater love has no one than this, that someone lay down his life for his friends.
14. You are my friends, if you do whatever I command you.
15. No longer do I call you servants, for the servant doesn't know what his lord does. But I have called you friends, for everything that I heard from my Father, I have made known to you.
16. You didn't choose me, but I chose you and appointed you, that you should go and bear fruit, and that your fruit should remain; that whatever you will ask of the Father in my name, he may give it to you.
17. "I command these things to you, that you may love one another.

They were commanded to make disciples.

Matthew 28:19 (WEB)

19. Go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit,

The words "go" and "baptize" are participles which derive their force from the one controlling verb "make disciples". The Great Commission is not to baptize or to teach or to go. It is literally "As you go, make disciples...baptize...teaching...". So, make disciples who make disciples.

The harvest was ripe, and they were to pray for harvesters, but they also needed spiritual shepherds to oversee the harvest.

Matthew 9:37-38 (WEB)

37. Then he said to his disciples, "The harvest indeed is plentiful, but the laborers are few.

38. Pray therefore that the Lord of the harvest will send out laborers into his harvest."

Luke 10:2 (WEB)

2. Then he said to them, "The harvest is indeed plentiful, but the laborers are few. Pray therefore to the Lord of the harvest, that he may send out laborers into his harvest.

Our success as the church should be predicated on how many people are actively winning people and raising them up to win people, not on how many new names are added to the roles nor how much the budget is increased. The strategy of Jesus has been ignored. It is venerated as something in the past, but not taken seriously as a rule for conduct in the present.

Today, well-intended ceremonies, programs, organizations, commissions and crusades of human ingenuity are trying valiantly to do a job that can only be done by people in the power of the Holy Spirit. Evangelism is not done by something (a program, a ministry) but by someone. Men are God's method.

Finding and training people who can find and train people must be our priority. We should start with a few and stay together. This will take time. Expect something from the people who are committed to this and keep them

going. Help them carry their burdens and let them carry on. Before they are turned loose from our support, they need to be thoroughly established in the faith that overcomes the world. Our emphasis needs to be on quality of life and quality of leadership.

### 1.3.9 My perspective

In my opinion, Coleman was spot on, with one important caveat. He tried to put new wine into old wine skins. He wrote from the perspective that we will continue to have buildings, and we will continue to have a professional clergy, and the life of the Church will continue to revolve around these things.<sup>8</sup> This is an understandable position. He saw that Scripture didn't line up with what the Church was doing, and he wanted to point it out without throwing the entire structure out the window. Don't throw the baby out with the bath water, right? If he had taken his perspective of Scripture one step further, and recognized the hindrance of buildings and professional clergy, I think Coleman would have been that much more ahead of his times.

The question needs to be asked: Can we make disciples if we are concerned about buildings and about paying the pastor? Historically, the answer to this question, from the perspective of the long-term is, "No." Sure, there are pastors who emphasize disciple-making under the traditional church trappings. Sure, we can emphasize these things for a season, and even be successful at it for a season. However, the long-term tendency is to pull away from making disciples who make disciples and become concerned with money. You have to justify the expense of the building and the expense of salaries. If the money doesn't come in, the pastor doesn't get paid and the building doesn't get paid off and kept up. The long-term tendency of having buildings and professional clergy is to do things which bring in money. The slow, steady work of making disciples who can make disciples, especially at the beginning, does not bring in the money to support buildings or professional clergy.

*You can't serve both God and mammon.* I didn't say that. Jesus, our Lord, said that.

We are not called to build God's Kingdom just for this generation. We are called to build long-term. As the people of God, we need to put away the structures which keep us from making disciples who make disciples through the generations. God's strategy in the earth is dependent on this. Keeping buildings and professional clergy will distract us from making disciples and toward other tasks which do not make disciples. And, we don't need these things to make disciples. Let's embrace the truth of Scripture without the trappings of the modern Church, remove the money motive from our activities, and build God's kingdom the way Jesus modeled for us.

---

<sup>8</sup>Barna takes the same tactful approach in his writings.

# Chapter 2

## Stages of a disciple's growth

The first step in making disciples is to gain an understanding of how disciples grow. There are five stages of a disciple's growth, as outlined in Scripture. No one in any of the stages is more valuable to God than anyone else. All are valuable in the sight of the Father. Understanding these stages and meeting the needs of people through these stages is important in making disciples.

### 2.1 Stage 1 - spiritually dead

The disciple is called to reach out to unbelievers. These are the ones who are spiritually dead. Every disciple was spiritually dead before they gave their heart to the Lord, before they were born again.

This stage is characterized by unbelief. Our job as disciples is to deal gently and respectfully with unbelievers until they come to the place of belief, they repent and are born again.

Ephesians 2:1-5 (WEB)

1. You were made alive when you were **dead in transgressions and sins**,
2. in which you once walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit who now works in the children of disobedience.
3. **We also all once lived among them** in the lusts of our flesh, doing the desires of the flesh and of the mind, and were by nature **children of wrath**, even as the rest.
4. But **God, being rich in mercy, for his great love with which he loved us**,
5. even when we were dead through our trespasses, **made us alive together with Christ**—by grace you have been saved—

John 3:3-5 (UKJV)

3. Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto you, **Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.**
4. Nicodemus says unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?
5. Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a man be **born of water and of the Spirit**, (o. pneuma) he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

2 Peter 3:9 (WEB)

9. The Lord is not slow concerning his promise, as some count slowness; but he is patient with us, not wishing that anyone should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

Galatians 4:19 (WEB)

19. My little children, of whom I am again in travail until **Christ is formed in you**—

Our job as disciples is to reach out to unbelievers, befriend them, answer their questions, love them, and believe God for the opportunity to share Christ with them. Sometimes we will need to travail for them until Christ is formed in them. To travail for unbelievers means to intercede, fast and cry out to God for them. This is what Jesus came to do, and this is what He expects us to do.

## 2.2 Stage 2 - Infant

Christians start out as spiritual infants. They don't know much about Jesus or being a disciple. All they know is that their lives have been radically changed, and they are in love with Jesus. They sense the Lord's love and grace over their lives, and they want to get to know Him better. And there is no better way to get to know Him than to consume as much scripture as possible.

This phase of the Christian life is characterized by ignorance. The Bible teaches that baby Christians need to crave the milk of the word, and they need foundational teaching. Spiritual infants are always amazed (the "wow" factor) at what they find in the word and what God is doing in their lives.

1 Peter 2:1-3 (WEB)

1. Putting away therefore all wickedness, all deceit, hypocrisies, envies, and all evil speaking,
2. as newborn babies, **long for the pure milk of the Word, that with it you may grow,**
3. if indeed you have **tasted that the Lord is gracious:**

Hebrews 5:13 (WEB)

13. For everyone who lives on **milk is not experienced in the word of righteousness, for he is a baby.**

Romans 2:20 (WEB)

20. a corrector of the foolish, a **teacher of babies**, having in the law the form of knowledge and of the truth.

1 Corinthians 3:1 (WEB)

1. Brothers, I couldn't speak to you as to spiritual, but as to **fleshly**, as to **babies** in Christ.

At this stage, the new baby disciple needs a solid foundation. He or she needs basic teaching which will lay the groundwork for future growth and work for the Lord. He or she needs a careful guiding hand, someone to guide them, someone to correct them and help them understand right and wrong as taught by the Bible.

Ephesians 1:3-14 (UKJV)

3. **Blessed be the God and Father** of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has **blessed us with all spiritual blessings** in heavenly places in Christ:
4. According as he has **chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:** (o. agape)
5. Having **predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will,**
6. To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he has **made us accepted in the beloved.**
7. In whom we have **redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;**
8. Wherein he has **abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence;**
9. Having **made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he has purposed in himself:**
10. That in the dispensation of the fullness of times he might **gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him:**
11. In whom also we have obtained an **inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who works all things after the counsel of his own will:**
12. That we should be to the **praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ.**
13. In whom all of you also **trusted, after that all of you heard the word (o. logos) of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that all of you believed, all of you were sealed with that holy Spirit (o. pneuma) of promise,**
14. Which is the **earn of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.**



In Ephesians 1, Paul is talking about the spiritual blessings provided to disciples from the Father through Jesus. These are all rooted in promises, and they are for all believers in Christ. Although spiritual babies will not be able to demonstrate these before they go on to being spiritual little children<sup>1</sup>, they will need to know them and understand what they mean. This is a basic scriptural outline of what it means to be a follower of Jesus.

The Father...

- chose us in Jesus before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love,
- predestined us to adoption as children by Jesus to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will,
- made us accepted in the beloved in grace,
- gave us redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace,
- caused Jesus to abound toward us in all wisdom and prudence,
- made known to us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure purposed in himself, to gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and on earth,
- gave us an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who works all things after the counsel of his own will,
- set us to the praise of his glory, who trusted in Christ,
- caused us to trust, after we heard the word of truth, the gospel of our salvation,
- sealed us with that holy Spirit of promise, the pledge of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession (God's own possession), to the praise of his glory.

### 2.3 Stage 3 - Spiritual Child

The next stage of spiritual growth described in the Bible is that of a spiritual child. Spiritual children are precious to the Lord. Their sins are forgiven for His name's sake. This is the stage in the life of a Christian where the person learns to deal with their own sin as the Bible prescribes, and learns to overcome sin.

Spiritual children are focused on themselves. All their experiences are about them. Their thinking tends to be carnal, rooted in the sin nature. They tend toward drama, codependency, and broken relationships. In short, spiritual children are characterized by self-centeredness.

Spiritual children need lots of patience. They need spiritual adults in their lives to guide them and direct them toward young adulthood. Spiritual adults need to teach them how to overcome sin in their lives. They need to gently guide spiritual children to think more about others than themselves. Spiritual children need to be guided to not see everything as about them, but to recognize that there is a bigger picture and to learn their place in that bigger picture. Here the spiritual adult is mentoring the spiritual child to live an overcoming life, to be strong in the things of God, and to war on behalf of others.

You shouldn't read this and mistakenly think that spiritual children are little kids. They are not necessarily kids at all. Adults can often wrap carnal behavior around sophisticated approaches to life, and make it seem they are wise and learned. However, carnal motives are rooted in self, rooted fundamentally in lust and a desire to please self, and carnal motivation is the tell-tale sign of a spiritual child. I have known people in their sixties who were children in the Lord. They were believers, had a love for Jesus and a desire to serve Him, but they had never learned to live beyond their carnal lifestyles and had never learned to overcome sin in their own lives. These are physical adults who are always defeated, always craving and never achieving, dissatisfied and grumbling. I would venture to guess, based on how much in-fighting and quibbling occurs at churches, that most of the members in American Churches are really spiritual children.

1 John 2:1 (WEB)

1. My little children, I write these things to you so **that you may not sin**. If anyone sins, we have a Counselor with the Father, Jesus Christ, the righteous.

1 John 2:12 (WEB)

---

<sup>1</sup>For example, number one is the major deliverable of spiritual children before they go to being spiritual young adults.

12. I write to you, little children, because your **sins are forgiven** you for his name's sake.

1 John 4:4 (WEB)

4. You are of God, little children, and have overcome them; because **greater is he who is in you** than he who is in the world.

1 John 5:21 (WEB)

21. Little children, keep yourselves from idols.

Isaiah 1:17-20 (UKJV)

17. Learn to do well; seek judgment, relieve the oppressed, judge the fatherless, plead for the widow.

18. Come now, and let us reason together, says the LORD: **though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.**

19. If all of you be willing and obedient, all of you shall eat the good of the land:

20. But if all of you refuse and rebel, all of you shall be devoured with the sword: for the mouth of the LORD has spoken it.

Hebrews 5:13-14 (WEB)

13. For everyone who lives on milk is not experienced in the word of righteousness, for he is a baby.

14. But solid food is for those who are full grown, who **by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern good and evil.**

Colossians 1:9-14 (UKJV)

9. For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to **pray for you**, and to desire that all of you might be **filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding;**

10. That all of you might **walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing**, being **fruitful in every good work**, and **increasing in the knowledge of God;**

11. **Strengthened with all might**, according to his glorious **power, unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness;**

12. Giving thanks unto the Father, which has made us **meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light:**

13. Who has **delivered us from the power of darkness**, and has **translated us into the kingdom of his (o. agape) dear Son:**

14. In whom we have **redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins:**

This last scripture bears some discussion. Here, Paul is praying for the Colossians, and his prayer, as that from a Father for his little children, serves two purposes for us. First, it allows us to see what the will of God is for little children. Also, it gives us a template which shows what little children should have mastered.

God wants little children...

- to be filled with the knowledge of His will in wisdom and spiritual understanding,
- to walk worthy of the Lord, pleasing Him, fruitful in every good work and increasing in the knowledge of God,
- to be strengthened with His might and power, to all patience and longsuffering,
- to be fit partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light,
- to be delivered from the power of darkness and translated into His Kingdom,
- to be redeemed through His blood and receive the forgiveness of sins.

### 2.3.1 Overcoming sin

Spiritual children migrate from being children to young adults when they learn to overcome sin in their own lives. And they overcome sin when by "**reason of use they have their senses exercised to discern good and evil**". As a spiritual child, you have to come to the place where you allow the Holy Spirit to deal with sin in your life.

God is committed to that. He will not stop until you are blameless and without blemish. As disciples, we need to have the same perspective as God has on sin.

Psalms 139:23-24 (WEB)

23. Search me, God, and know my heart. Try me, and know my thoughts.

24. See if there is **any wicked way in me**, and lead me in the everlasting way.

Hebrews 12:6 (WEB)

6. for whom the **Lord loves, he disciplines**, and chastises every son whom he receives.”

Proverbs 3:12 (UKJV)

12. For whom the **LORD loves he corrects**; even as a father the son in whom he delights.

1 John 1:8-10 (WEB)

8. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.

9. If we **confess our sins**, he is **faithful and righteous to forgive us the sins**, and to cleanse **us from all unrighteousness**.

10. If we **say that we haven't sinned, we make him a liar**, and his word is not in us.

Hebrews 4:12 (WEB)

12. For the word of God is living and active, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing of soul and spirit, of both joints and marrow, and is able to **discern the thoughts and intentions of the heart**.

The following is a Biblical, step-by-step method the spiritual child can use to deal with sin.

Here, we will use the CRAB method.

C - Confess your sin

R - Repent

A - Approach the throne of grace for help in time of need

B - Before the throne, determine to not live this way

Here you put your flesh on the cross and mortify the sin nature.

### 2.3.1.1 Confess your sin

As you go along in your life, when you sin, the Holy Spirit will convict you of that sin. You will feel pierced to the heart over the sin, possibly grieved. You are responsible to confess your sin, to the Lord certainly, and sometimes to your brothers and sisters. When you confess, God is faithful and just to forgive you **and** to cleanse you from all unrighteousness.

1 John 1:8-9 (WEB)

8. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.

9. If we **confess** our sins, he is faithful and righteous to forgive us the sins, and to **cleanse us from all unrighteousness**.

James 5:16 (WEB)

16. **Confess** your offenses **to one another**, and pray for one another, that you may be healed. The insistent prayer of a righteous person is powerfully effective.

### 2.3.1.2 Repent of your sin

After you confess your sin, turn *from* the sin and turn *to* God, from whom you get strength and enabling to live above sin. You don't have the goods in yourself to live this life. You need His grace.

Acts 26:19-20 (WEB)

19. “Therefore, King Agrippa, I was not disobedient to the heavenly vision,

20. but declared first to them of Damascus, at Jerusalem, and throughout all the country of Judea, and also to the Gentiles, that they should **repent and turn to God**, doing works worthy of repentance.

### 2.3.1.3 Approach the throne of grace

Grace is unmerited favor. Grace doesn't just accept us and put a band aid on a gushing wound. Grace extends mercy to us and then enables us to overcome sin. This realization of how much you need the Lord to overcome sin is a real key to overcoming sin. When you stop believing you can do it on your own and turn to him to get grace in time of need, you will start to overcome.

Hebrews 4:16 (WEB)

16. Let's therefore draw near with boldness to the throne of grace, that we may **receive mercy** and may **find grace for help in time of need**.

### 2.3.1.4 Before the throne, determine you will not live this way anymore

Here before the throne of grace, you determine that you will not live this way anymore. You put off, mortify or kill the sin nature which took you down the path of sin in the first place. This is done as an act of decision before the throne of grace.

There, before the Holy Spirit, commit yourself to putting off the sin and never wearing it again. It doesn't matter if you have to continue to do this over and over. Some things will take coming back to the throne of grace over and over. But decide that by grace (His power and His enabling) through faith (your unbending decision) you will put off this old man and walk blameless before the Creator until you breath your last breath.

Colossians 3:2-9 (WEB)

2. Set your mind on the **things that are above**, not on the things that are on the earth.
3. For **you died**, and your life is hidden with Christ in God.
4. When Christ, our life, is revealed, then you will also be revealed with him in glory.
5. **Put to death** therefore your members which are on the earth: sexual immorality, uncleanness, depraved passion, evil desire, and covetousness, which is idolatry.
6. For these things' sake the wrath of God comes on the children of disobedience.
7. You also once walked in those, when you lived in them;
8. but now you also **put them all away**: anger, wrath, malice, slander, and shameful speaking out of your mouth.
9. Don't lie to one another, seeing that you have put off the old man with his doings,

### 2.3.1.5 Overcoming sin for the rest of your life

If you continue to live like this, you will overcome sin. The sin nature which drives you will be replaced with the nature of God living in your born again spirit. You will be putting off the old man, being renewed in the spirit of your mind, and putting on the new man. You will be putting off the deeds of the flesh and have the fruit of the Spirit manifest in your life. This lifestyle is critical for disciples. It is a life-long process, something we should pursue with all our hearts as long as we live, in the same way we pursue Jesus.

## 2.4 Stage 4 - Young adult

Young adults are strong, learning and growing quickly, and are preparing to enter into society as responsible adults. In the same way, spiritual young adults are strong and being made ready to kick in the gates of hell. This phase in the life of disciples is characterized by service, God-centeredness and other-centeredness.

Spiritual young adults have learned to overcome sin. They have learned to pray, to spend time with the Lord, and are being taught how to love and serve others. Here they need to learn how to use their spiritual gifts, how to use the weapons of warfare to pull down strongholds — in their lives and in the lives of others — and how to overcome the world and the devil's forces.

This is the time in a disciple's life when God gives them a vision. God sets them on a path toward purpose, so they can be fruitful and productive.

Acts 2:17 (WEB)

17. 'It will be in the last days, says God, that I will **pour out my Spirit on all flesh**. Your sons and your daughters will prophesy. Your **young men will see visions**. Your old men will dream dreams.

1 John 2:13 (WEB)

13. I write to you, fathers, because you know him who is from the beginning. I write to you, young men, because **you have overcome the evil one**. I write to you, little children, because you know the Father.

1 John 2:14 (WEB)

14. I have written to you, fathers, because you know him who is from the beginning. I have written to you, young men, because **you are strong, and the word of God remains in you, and you have overcome the evil one**.

### 2.4.1 Ministry

In the following scriptures, Paul demonstrates what is necessary to pray for spiritual young adults to see them grow up in the Lord. This provides a template of how someone more mature should minister to young men and women. These are steps which young men and women in the Lord need to master in their walk toward spiritual parents.

1 Thessalonians 1:2-3 (WEB)

2. We always give thanks to God for all of you, mentioning you in our prayers,

3. remembering without ceasing your **work of faith** and **labor of love** and **perseverance of hope** in our Lord Jesus Christ, before our God and Father.

2 Thessalonians 1:11-12 (WEB)

11. To this end we also pray always for you, that our God may **count you worthy of your calling**, and **fulfill every desire of goodness and work of faith with power**,

12. **that the name of our Lord Jesus may be glorified in you, and you in him, according to the grace** of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ.

Spiritual young men and women should master...

- their work of faith,
- their labor of love,
- their perseverance of hope,
- walking worthy of the calling,
- fulfilling every good thing and every work of faith with power,
- glorifying (investing with glory, honoring) the name of Jesus in themselves,
- themselves being glorified (invested with glory, honored) in Jesus by the grace of the Father and of Jesus.

### 2.4.2 SACRED

Young men and women have grown to the place where it isn't all about them anymore. They have come to a place in their spiritual life where they are overcoming the devil, the world and their own carnal nature. Often, as you walk through the things of God, circumstances will cause you to respond in a way that you know isn't right. For example, someone may talk about taking candy from a baby, obviously joking about how easy something is, and you may respond to that in anger, frustration, or even rage or hatred. This may happen to you several times during a week, or even a single day.

What is going on? Well, chances are it is orchestrated by the Lord. The Bible talks of Jesus, when He comes, as a refiner and purifier of silver.

Malachi 3:2-6 (WMB)

2. "But who can endure **the day of his coming**? And who will stand **when he appears**? For he is like a **refiner's fire**, and like **launderers' soap**;
3. and **he will sit as a refiner and purifier of silver**, and he will purify the sons of Levi, and refine them as gold and silver; and they shall offer to the LORD offerings in righteousness.
4. Then the offering of Judah and Jerusalem will be pleasant to the LORD, as in the days of old, and as in ancient years.
5. I will come near to you to **judgment**; and I will be a swift witness **against the sorcerers**, and **against the adulterers**, and **against the perjurers**, and **against those who oppress the hireling in his wages, the widow, and the fatherless, and who deprive the foreigner of justice, and don't fear me,**" says the LORD of Hosts.
6. "For **I, the LORD, don't change; therefore you, sons of Jacob, are not consumed.**

The work the Lord is describing here is one of cleaning a person's life out, of removing impurities and cleansing the soul. Much cleaning takes place when you repent initially and you are washed by the Holy Spirit. But even though you are cleansed, you still need to confess when you sin, so the Lord can "cleanse you of **all** unrighteousness".

Often there are issues in a person's life which are rooted in deep hurt. The Lord will bring these to the surface in our lives by using circumstances to reveal them. He will sit as a "refiner and purifier of silver". Basically, a refiner would put the silver ore in a crucible and heat it. At some point, the silver would melt and pool at the bottom, and the large dross would float to the top. Then, the refiner would remove the dross and turn up the heat. More dross would come to the surface. The refiner would remove the dross and turn up the heat yet again. This process would be used until the refiner could look into the crucible and see his own reflection. At this point, he would know the silver is pure.

When the Lord sits as a refiner of silver in our lives, He puts us through a similar process. However, typically, the fire used to bring up the dross in our hearts is circumstances. Circumstances which cause you to react in a way which is decidedly not how a disciple should act, in anger, rage, hatred or even physical violence, are a sign that the Holy Spirit is at work. Or, you may cry for unexplained reasons. You may trigger on some set of words or some attitude by another person, and often you will see this come up several times in a day, a week or a short period.

When you see circumstances like this, you can be sure the Holy Spirit is using them to "turn up the heat". His goal is not to cause you grief, but to reveal the dross, to make it come to the surface, so He can pull it out of your life and bring healing.

Times like these can be very stressful. You might feel rage, or hurt, or rejection, or deep-seated resentment. You might feel grief – a sense of loss. You might feel some other negative emotion that you know is not reflective of your life in Jesus. You deal with this in a similar way you deal with sin. You must go boldly to the throne of grace and get help in time of need. But unlike dealing with sin, you need to get revelation. This is where SACRED comes into the picture.

SACRED is a tool, a device that you can use to query the Lord in time of need. The following are the steps you need to use to get close to the Holy Spirit and get the information you need about what God is doing.

Sit quietly in a place and at a time where you are not likely to be interrupted for thirty minutes to an hour. Make sure you have tissues, a Bible, something to write with and something to write on. As the Holy Spirit shows you things, you will want to jot them down.

### **S - Safe**

Recognize that you are in His hands, and you are safe. Slow down. Don't just ignore the negative emotions, the inappropriate responses on your part. Imagine the Holy Spirit surrounding you, wrapping you in His love. He is enveloping you, and you are safe. Sense His presence, and know according to Scripture that he loves you and wants the absolute best for you. He will never leave you without support if you trust Him. He has known about any issues you had since they became part of your life, and He has loved you and accepted you anyway. You are safe with Him.

### **A - Acknowledge**

Acknowledge the negative emotion. Don't make excuses for it, and don't judge it. If it is sinful, confess it openly and honestly to the Lord. Allow the Holy Spirit full access to it. Hold nothing back from Him. He wants you free, and He wants you walking in health and well-being. You are safe to allow Him full access to this issue. Your flesh may struggle with doing so, especially if you are being tempted to

engage in addictive behaviors or other sin, but make a conscious decision to not ignore this. Your job is to allow the Holy Spirit full reign to work in you to deliver you from whatever has you trapped.

### **C - Cast the care of this onto the Lord**

Cast the care or burden of the feelings over onto the Holy Spirit. He loves you. He will carry this and work through it with you. He will never withdraw His love from you, and His grace covers you until you get a clear understanding of the source of this reaction in your wounded soul. Partner with Him, and let him bear the load for you in this time of need. You don't need to carry this alone. And, in fact, you can't carry it alone. You need Him. Don't be afraid or hesitant to admit that to Him.

### **R - Rest**

This is the work of the Holy Spirit. Don't fret, but relax in His presence and let Him have His way. Breath deeply. When you breath, inhale His presence, His life. As you breath in, enjoy His presence and His love for you. Relish in the safety and security of your relationship with Him. As you breath out, let go of the burden. Breath until you are calm and the fear response is no longer heavy.

### **E - Examine**

Examine your response.

Ask the Holy Spirit questions:

*Why am I reacting this way?*

*What wound in my past is this situation pushing against to cause the reaction?*

*Why do I feel bad or angry or hurt in this situation?*

Listen to the Holy Spirit and allow Him to show you what is going on. When he does, get it down in writing. You will continue to take this to prayer until He has completely delivered you.

### **D - Determine**

Finally, determine that you will allow the Holy Spirit to be the Lord of this thing. You will allow the Holy Spirit to bring complete liberty and freedom in this area of your life. By His grace, you will not stop pursuing Him until you are free from the hurt which is hindering you. You will forgive, you will reconcile, you will do whatever is necessary to bring this area to complete healing.

As you can see, the value of SACRED is that it helps you slow down and listen to the Holy Spirit. When the Spirit is exposing stuff, it is common to feel overwhelmed. You feel unclean, like your old sinful lifestyle is haunting you. You feel like you are missing the heart of God in your life. You will tend to panic because the issue you are facing is sitting on old hurts, and you will start feeling the pain as the Holy Spirit brings it to the light.

SACRED helps you slow down, relax, admit there's an issue without judging yourself, and get the help from God you need to get through it. You force your panicking heart to calm, and then you force it to listen to the Holy Spirit. Then, you determine in your heart that whatever the Spirit tells you to do, you are going to do.

Remember, the pain is always there, and it is always affecting your behavior. The Holy Spirit is bringing it out so you can be free. The Holy Spirit will never withdraw His love from you. He will never leave you alone or stop comforting you. Hold on to Him and let Him do the work of purification, and He will set you free.

Of course, SACRED is built on the Biblical foundation of confession and repentance. People tend to be trapped because they rebelled against God at the time of the hurt, or they need to forgive, or some such. You are simply admitting there is an issue, something you weren't aware of, and you are turning from anything which would keep you from being free, and you are turning to God to allow Him full access to the thing. Even if there is no sin on your part, you need to make the right decision to allow the Holy Spirit to heal you.

## **2.5 Stage 5 – Spiritual fathers and mothers**

The last stage in the path to spiritual maturity is becoming a parent, a father or a mother. As in the natural, fathers and mothers are adults who reproduce. In God's plan, a father and a mother, brought together under the covenant of marriage, become one flesh in their sexual union. Out of that relationship of love and acceptance comes children. Spiritual parents need to have impeccable character. They need to have learned how to overcome sin in their own

lives. They need to have learned how to overcome the devil in their own lives. They need to have a solid foundation in the truths of Scripture and a long-standing relationship with Jesus. And finally, they need to have produced spiritual offspring.

Fathers and mothers have known Him who is from the beginning. They oversee the teaching and discipleship component of the Church. In their relationship with the Lord, fathers and mothers dream the dream of God for the body of Christ, and they are responsible before the Lord to see that dream become a reality in the earth. They plan the work to see lost people found. They plan the work to see babies grow up to be little children, to see little children grow up to be young adults, and to see young adults grow up to be parents. They see to it that babies are fed, that the messes of children are cleaned up, and that young adults are trained up in the discipline and instruction of the Lord. They love and hold the babies, they discipline and direct the children, they encourage and guide the young adults, and they mentor other parents to see God's plan in the spirit and to make His will done on earth as it is in heaven.

Spiritual parents are as important in the body of Christ as natural parents are in the world.

### 2.5.1 Know God

1 John 2:13-14 (WEB)

13. I write to you, fathers, because **you know him who is from the beginning**. I write to you, young men, because you have overcome the evil one. I write to you, little children, because you know the Father.

14. I have written to you, fathers, because **you know him who is from the beginning**. I have written to you, young men, because you are strong, and the word of God remains in you, and you have overcome the evil one.

1 John 1:1-3 (WEB)

1. That which was **from the beginning**, that which we have heard, that which we have seen with our eyes, that which we saw, and our hands touched, concerning the Word of life

2. (and the life was revealed, and we have seen, and testify, and declare to you the life, the eternal life, which was with the Father, and was revealed to us);

3. that which we have seen and heard **we declare to you**, that you also may have fellowship with us. Yes, and **our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son, Jesus Christ**.

### 2.5.2 Train up children

Proverbs 22:6 (WEB)

6. **Train up a child** in the way he should go, and when he is old he will not depart from it.

Proverbs 22:15 (WEB)

15. Folly is bound up in the heart of a child: the **rod of discipline** drives it far from him.

Proverbs 23:22-24 (WEB)

22. **Listen to your father** who gave you life, and don't despise **your mother** when she is old.

23. Buy the truth, and don't sell it. **Get wisdom, discipline, and understanding**.

24. The father of the **righteous** has great joy. Whoever fathers a **wise child** delights in him.

Ephesians 6:4 (WEB)

4. You fathers, **don't provoke** your children to wrath, but **nurture them in the discipline and instruction of the Lord**.

Hebrews 12:5-11 (WEB)

5. You have forgotten the exhortation which reasons with you as with children, "My son, don't take lightly **the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when you are reprov'd by him**;

6. for whom the **Lord loves, he disciplines, and chastises every son** whom he receives."

7. It is for **discipline** that you **endure**. God **deals with you as with children**, for what son is there whom his father doesn't discipline?



8. But if you are **without discipline**, of which all have been made partakers, then **you are illegitimate, and not children**.

9. Furthermore, we had the fathers of our flesh to chasten us, and we paid them respect. Shall we not much rather be in subjection to the Father of spirits, and live?

10. For **they** indeed, for a few days, **punished us as seemed good to them**; but **he for our profit**, that we may be **partakers of his holiness**.

11. All chastening seems for the present to be not joyous but grievous; yet afterward it yields the **peaceful fruit of righteousness to those who have been trained** by it.

1 Thessalonians 2:11 (WEB)

11. As you know, **we exhorted, comforted, and implored every one of you, as a father does his own children**,

1 Corinthians 4:15 (WEB)

15. For though you have ten thousand tutors in Christ, you don't have many fathers. For in Christ Jesus, **I became your father through the Good News**.

Proverbs 29:15-17 (WEB)

15. The **rod of correction** gives **wisdom**, but a child left to himself causes shame to his mother.

16. When the wicked increase, sin increases; but the righteous will see their downfall.

17. **Correct your son**, and he will give you peace; yes, he will bring delight to your soul.

Psalms 78:5-6 (WEB)

5. For he established a covenant in Jacob, and **appointed a teaching** in Israel, which he **commanded our fathers, that they should make them known to their children**;

6. that the generation to come might know, even **the children** who should be born; who should **arise and tell their children**,

### 2.5.3 Dream the dream of God

Numerous portions of Scripture detail the heartbeat of God for His people. If you are well-read in the Bible, you can probably point to your favorite portion of Scripture where the heart of the Father is expressed so eloquently toward His children. Ps 91 may be your favorite, or Is 54. There are numerous portions of scripture like this. One of the responsibilities of spiritual parents is to dream the dreams of God, as detailed in Acts, Joel and Job.

Acts 2:17 (WEB)

17. 'It will be in the last days, says God, that I will **pour out my Spirit on all flesh**. Your sons and your daughters will prophesy. Your young men will see visions. **Your old men will dream dreams**.

Joel 2:28 (WEB)

28. "It will happen afterward, that I will **pour out my Spirit on all flesh**; and your sons and your daughters will prophesy. **Your old men will dream dreams**. Your young men will see visions.

Job 33:14-16 (WEB)

14. For God speaks once, yes twice, though man pays no attention.

15. In a **dream**, in a **vision of the night**, when deep sleep falls on men, in slumbering on the bed;

16. Then **he opens the ears of men**, and seals their instruction,

Spiritual parents carry this privilege, this obligation. They are responsible to search Scripture, to find the places where God has communicated His will for His children, and believe Him to see it become a reality in the earth.

#### 2.5.3.1 Culture of honor

One of the dreams God has for his children has to do with honor. It is best seen in the following Scripture.

John 17:16-26 (WEB)

16. They are **not of the world** even as I am not of the world.
17. **Sanctify them in your truth. Your word is truth.**
18. As you sent me into the world, even so **I have sent them** into the world.
19. For their sakes **I sanctify myself, that they themselves also may be sanctified** in truth.
20. **Not for these only do I pray, but for those also who will believe in me through their word,**
21. that they may **all be one**; even as **you, Father, are in me, and I in you**, that they also may be **one in us**; that the **world** may believe that **you sent me**.
22. The **glory which you have given me, I have given to them; that they may be one, even as we are one;**
23. **I in them, and you in me, that they may be perfected into one;** that the **world** may know that **you sent me and loved them, even as you loved me.**
24. Father, I desire that they also whom you have given me be with me where I am, that **they may see my glory, which you have given me, for you loved me before the foundation of the world.**
25. Righteous Father, the world hasn't known you, but **I knew you; and these knew that you sent me.**
26. **I made known to them your name, and will make it known; that the love with which you loved me may be in them, and I in them."**

This amazing portion of Scripture is theologically rich and compelling. It contains the last prayer of Jesus for His disciples, documented by John the Apostle. For example, Jesus sanctified Himself so that the disciples could be sanctified in God's word, so the disciples could be one. It is the heart of God that spiritual parents learn to sacrifice for their spiritual children so they can be sanctified and walk as one. Also, Jesus made known to His disciples the name of the Father (love) that the love the Father had for Jesus could be in them, and Jesus in them.

The thing I want to point out to you is in v. 22. The glory (or honor) which the Father gave Jesus, Jesus gave to us, so we could be one even as Jesus and the Father are one. The word translated glory in this passage is the greek word "doxa", which can mean glory, praise, radiance, majesty, lustre, or it can mean honor, dignity and respect. Clearly, John is using this word to mean honor, dignity and respect.

Think about it. The honor, dignity and respect that the Father gave to Jesus, Jesus gave to His disciples, so they could be one, even as Jesus and the Father were one. This undergirding of dignity and honor that Jesus and the Father share is something that God extends to His children, and it is something He expects us to extend to each other. The end result of living this way, of building a culture of honor, is a unity as tight and vibrant as that between Jesus and the Father.

I want you to see in v. 25 that Jesus knew the Father. This is important. It takes someone who knows the Father, who watches how He treats people and emulates it, who seeks to be perfect, like the Father, to be able to extend this honor, dignity and respect. Clearly, this task is given to spiritual parents. It is the role of spiritual parents in the church to know the Father and to teach His children how to be like Him. It is the role of spiritual parents to build a culture of honor in the Church.

John 8:48-54 (WEB)

48. Then the Jews answered him, "Don't we say well that you are a Samaritan, and have a demon?"
49. Jesus answered, "I don't have a demon, but **I honor my Father** and you dishonor me.
50. But **I don't seek my own glory. There is one who seeks and judges.**
51. Most certainly, I tell you, **if a person keeps my word, he will never see death."**
52. Then the Jews said to him, "Now we know that you have a demon. Abraham died, as did the prophets; and you say, 'If a man keeps my word, he will never taste of death.'
53. Are you greater than our father, Abraham, who died? The prophets died. Who do you make yourself out to be?"
54. Jesus answered, "**If I glorify myself, my glory is nothing. It is my Father who glorifies me, of whom you say that he is our God.**

We see here how the honoring works between the Lord Jesus and the Father. Jesus honors (respects) the Father. He didn't seek His own glory (honor). The Father sought His honor. If Jesus honored Himself, it would be nothing. It is the Father who glorifies Him. Notice that throughout this context, honoring the Father means doing what He says, keeping His word. Anyone who honors Jesus by keeping His word will never see death.

John 7:16-18 (WEB)

16. Jesus therefore answered them, "**My teaching is not mine, but his who sent me.**

17. If anyone **desires to do his will**, he will **know about the teaching, whether it is from God**, or if I am speaking from myself.

18. He who **speaks from himself seeks his own glory**, but he who **seeks the glory of him who sent him is true**, and no unrighteousness is in him.

A culture of honor will honor the Father first, and is intent on doing His will. Anyone intent on honoring the Father will know the teaching, whether it is from God or not. Such a person doesn't speak from himself, seeking his own honor, but he seeks the honor of the Lord first, speaking from Him.

Romans 8:15-31 (WEB)

15. For you didn't receive the spirit of bondage again to fear, but you received the **Spirit of adoption**, by whom we cry, "Abba! Father!"

16. The **Spirit** himself **testifies** with our spirit that **we are children of God**;

17. and if children, then heirs: **heirs of God and joint heirs with Christ**, if indeed we **suffer with him**, that we may also be **glorified with him**.

18. For I consider that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which will be revealed toward us.

19. For the creation waits with eager expectation for the **children of God** to be **revealed**.

20. For the creation was subjected to vanity, not of its own will, but because of him who subjected it, in hope

21. that the creation itself also will be delivered from the bondage of decay into the **liberty of the glory of the children of God**.

22. For we know that the whole creation groans and travails in pain together until now.

23. Not only so, but ourselves also, who have the first **fruits of the Spirit**, even **we** ourselves **groan** within ourselves, **waiting for adoption, the redemption of our body**.

24. For we were saved in hope, but hope that is seen is not hope. For who hopes for that which he sees?

25. But if we hope for that which we don't see, we wait for it with patience.

26. In the same way, the Spirit also helps our weaknesses, for we don't know how to pray as we ought. But the **Spirit himself makes intercession for us** with groanings which can't be uttered.

27. He who searches the hearts knows what is on the Spirit's mind, because he makes intercession for the saints according to God.

28. We know that **all things work together for good** for those who love God, for those who are called according to his purpose.

29. For whom he **foreknew**, he also **predestined** to be **conformed to the image of his Son**, that he might be the firstborn among many brothers.

30. Whom he predestined, those he also **called**. Whom he called, those he also **justified**. Whom he justified, those he also **glorified**.

31. What then shall we say about these things? **If God is for us, who can be against us?**

How much more could the Creator of the Universe honor us than by adopting us as His children. We have received the Spirit of adoption, who testifies that we are children, heirs of God and joint heirs of Jesus. The suffering we are going through now doesn't compare to the glory (honor) to be revealed to us, the glory of the children of God. We hope for the completion of our adoption, the redemption of our bodies.

The Spirit makes intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered, according to God. All things work together for good to those who love God, those called according to His purpose. Those He foreknew, He predestined

to be conformed to the image of His Son. Those He predestined, He called; those He called, He justified; those He justified, He glorified.

God is for us; no one can be against us.

John 5:41-44 (WEB)

41. I don't receive **glory from men**.

42. But I know you, that you don't have **God's love in yourselves**.

43. I have come **in my Father's name**, and you don't receive me. If another comes **in his own name**, you will receive him.

44. **How can you believe, who receive glory from one another, and you don't seek the glory that comes from the only God?**

Luke 14:10-11 (WEB)

10. But when you are invited, go and sit in the **lowest place**, so that when he who invited you comes, he may tell you, 'Friend, **move up higher**.' Then you will be **honored in the presence of all who sit at the table with you**.

11. For everyone who **exalts himself will be humbled, and whoever humbles himself will be exalted.**"

A culture of honor is not an arrogant culture. It is one in which we honor first and foremost God the Father, God the Son and God the Spirit. Then, we honor each other by becoming a servant to all. We don't seek the highest place, but the lower place, the place where we humble ourselves and allow the Creator to exalt us as He will.

2 Corinthians 3:17-18 (WEB)

17. Now the **Lord is the Spirit** and where the **Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty**.

18. But we all, with unveiled face **seeing the glory of the Lord as in a mirror, are transformed into the same image from glory to glory, even as from the Lord, the Spirit**.

Hebrews 2:7-10 (WEB)

7. You made him a little lower than the angels. You crowned him with glory and honor.

8. You have put all things in subjection under his feet." For in that he subjected all things to him, he left nothing that is not subject to him. But now we don't see all things subjected to him, yet.

9. But we see **him who has been made a little lower than the angels, Jesus**, because of the suffering of death **crowned with glory and honor**, that by the grace of God he should taste of death for everyone.

10. For it became him, for whom are all things, and through whom are all things, in **bringing many children to glory**, to make the author of their salvation perfect through sufferings.

The culture of honor is a transformational one, in which we gaze at the glory of the Lord as in a mirror, and we are transformed into the same image from glory to glory. Jesus, the Son, was made a little lower than the angels, and because of the suffering of death was crowned with glory and honor. He it is, the Author of our salvation, who brings many children to glory.

2 Thessalonians 2:13-17 (WEB)

13. But we are bound to always give thanks to God for you, **brothers loved by the Lord**, because **God chose you** from the beginning for salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief in the truth,

14. to which he called you through our Good News, **for the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ**.

15. So then, brothers, stand firm and hold the traditions which you were taught by us, whether by word or by letter.

16. Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God our Father, **who loved us and gave us eternal comfort and good hope through grace**,

17. comfort your hearts and establish you in every good work and word.

It is important that new believers start out their relationship with God being pulled into the culture of honor. From the beginning they are brothers loved by the Lord and chosen by God for the obtaining of the glory of Jesus. From the beginning they should be made to see their value and worth to the Father and Jesus.

### 2.5.3.2 Will of the Father

Spiritual parents are charged with the responsibility to take the dream of God (the will of the Father, if you will) and make it a reality in the earth.

Matthew 6:9-13 (UKJV)

9. After this manner therefore pray all of you: Our Father which are in heaven, Hallowed be your name.
10. **Your kingdom come, Your will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.**
11. Give us this day our **daily bread**.
12. And **forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors.**
13. And **lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil:** For your is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

Luke 11:1-4 (UKJV)

1. And it came to pass, that, as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.
2. And he said unto them, When all of you pray, say, Our Father which are in heaven, Hallowed be your name. **Your kingdom come. Your will be done, as in heaven, so in earth.**
3. Give us day by day our daily bread.
4. And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation; but deliver us from evil.

How do we bring the will of God in the earth as it is in heaven? Well, obviously we pray. Jesus said to pray specifically to the Father that the Kingdom would come and His will would be done on earth as it is in heaven. You may wonder what our daily bread, forgiveness of debts and deliverance from evil have to do with God's Kingdom. The Father wants us to reach out to him to have our (not "my", but "our") practical needs met. He wants us to have everything we need to bring His will in the earth. He wants us to have our spiritual needs met, which begins with forgiving others so we can receive His forgiveness. If we don't forgive, we will not be forgiven, and we will be lead into temptation (trials and sifting); if we do, we will be delivered from "the evil". He wants us delivered from evil, which includes an evil world, an evil generation and the evil one.

Is there anything else we should do besides pray? Yes. Consider the following from our Lord:

John 5:19-23 (WEB)

19. Jesus therefore answered them, "Most certainly, I tell you, the **Son can do nothing of himself, but what he sees the Father doing. For whatever things he does, these the Son also does likewise.**
20. For the **Father has affection for the Son, and shows him all things that he himself does.** He will show him greater works than these, that you may marvel.
21. For as the Father raises the dead and gives them life, even so the Son also gives life to whom he desires.
22. For **the Father judges no one, but he has given all judgment to the Son,**
23. **that all may honor the Son, even as they honor the Father. He who doesn't honor the Son doesn't honor the Father who sent him.**

John 5:30-41 (WEB)

30. **I can of myself do nothing.** As I hear, I judge, and my judgment is righteous; because **I don't seek my own will, but the will of my Father who sent me.**
31. "If I testify about myself, my witness is not valid.
32. It is another who testifies about me. I know that the testimony which he testifies about me is true.
33. You have sent to John, and he has testified to the truth.
34. But **the testimony which I receive is not from man.** However, I say these things that you may be saved.
35. He was the burning and shining lamp, and you were willing to rejoice for a while in his light.

36. But the testimony which I have is greater than that of John, for **the works which the Father gave me to accomplish, the very works that I do, testify about me, that the Father has sent me.**

37. The Father himself, who sent me, has testified about me. You have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his form.

38. **You don't have his word living in you,** because you don't believe him whom he sent.

39. "You search the Scriptures, because you think that in them you have eternal life; and these are they which testify about me.

40. Yet you will not come to me, that you may have life.

41. **I don't receive glory from men.**

So here is what Jesus did to bring the will of the Father to the earth.

- Jesus did what He saw the Father doing.
- Because the Father loved (fileo, had affection for) the Son, He showed the Son what He was doing.
- The Father gave all judgment to the Son; if you honor the Son, you honor the Father.
- Jesus didn't do anything of Himself; the works the Father gave Him, that's what He did. Those works testify that the Father sent Him.
- The Jews didn't have the Father's word living in them.
- Jesus didn't receive glory from men, but from the Father.

Notice the depth of relationship and the total dependence Jesus had on the Father. Here are the things that Jesus did to bring the will of the Father to the earth.

- Jesus spent time with the Father, so the Father had affection for Him.
- The Father honored Jesus (gave all judgment to Him); you can't honor the Father without honoring Jesus.
  - Jesus sat comfortably in the niche He had with the Father.
- Jesus emulated the Father; everything the Father did, Jesus did.
- Jesus had the Father's word living in Him, i.e., Jesus obeyed the Father.
- Jesus received glory from the Father, not from men.

So, if you want to bring the will of the Father to the earth, you need to (1) spend time with Jesus, (2) settle into the niche Jesus provides for you, (3) watch Jesus and emulate Him, doing what He does, (4) have His word living in you and obey His word, and (5) receive glory from Jesus and not from men.

The Scriptures above barely scratch the surface of what it means to live in a culture of honor. And these teachings barely scratch the surface of what it means to dream the dreams of God. As spiritual parents, your primary responsibility in the Church will be to take hold of the dreams of the Father for his children and make those dreams a reality in the earth. This should be done systematically and in a way which builds His church into the blameless and spotless bride of Jesus, the overcoming wife of the Lord. This is a difficult task and an overall thankless one. It is a task which involves serving, giving, praying, dying to self, mortifying the carnal nature, and pressing toward the goal.

The Church of Jesus, however, will never become all the Lord wants it to be without spiritual parents living like this.

## Part II

# Where are you?

## 2.6 Assessment

Do you know where you are, as far as your level of maturity? It is important to know, so that you can study the elements of Scripture you need in order to grow to the next level. The following is a spiritual life assessment based on Scripture. Basically, this takes the character traits from the portions of Scripture which lay out the requirements for bishops (elders, or overseers) and servants (deacons).

1 Timothy 3:2-7 (WEB)

2. The overseer therefore must be **without reproach**, the **husband of one wife**, **temperate**, **sensible**, **modest**, **hospitable**, **good at teaching**;
3. **not a drinker**, **not violent**, **not greedy for money**, but **gentle**, **not quarrelsome**, **not covetous**;
4. one who **rules his own house well**, having children in subjection with all reverence;
5. (but how could someone who doesn't know how to rule one's own house take care of God's assembly?)
6. **not a new convert**, lest being puffed up he fall into the same condemnation as the devil.
7. Moreover he **must have good testimony from those who are outside**, to avoid falling into reproach and the snare of the devil.

Titus 1:7-9 (WEB)

7. For the overseer must be **blameless**, as **God's steward**, **not self-pleasing**, **not easily angered**, **not given to wine**, not violent, **not greedy for dishonest gain**;
8. but **given to hospitality**, a **lover of good**, **sober minded**, **fair**, **holy**, **self-controlled**,
9. **holding to the faithful word which is according to the teaching**, that he may be able to exhort in the sound doctrine, and to convict those who contradict him.

Using the scale (0 = weak to 10 = strong), rate yourself and circle the number that best describes you. Compare yourself to Jesus and not other people. Of course you are better than Hitler. No one cares. Rate yourself compared to the life and work of Jesus. Be as honest and realistic as you can.

1. I am without reproach with a good testimony from those who are outside (1Tim 3:2,7).  
weak 0 ... 1 ... 2 ... 3 ... 4 ... 5 ... 6 ... 7 ... 8 ... 9 ... 10 strong
  - (a) I am marked by honesty and integrity in dealing with people.
  - (b) I am trustworthy and careful to be perceived as such.
  - (c) I earn respect in the way I conduct myself, though I am not a victim of the desire for approval.
  - (d) I have a good reputation among people, and am well thought of.
  - (e) I am not aware of anything that anyone can use against me.
  - (f) I have forgiven any and all who have offended me, and I have sought forgiveness from those I've offended.
  - (g) I do not know of any broken relationships in my life.
  - (h) When I discover that I've hurt or offended someone, I deal with him or her immediately, openly, and humbly.
  - (i) I give every indication of desiring to be a godly, righteous person, someone who is above reproach.
  - (j) I have a good testimony with those who are outside the Church.
2. I am the husband of one wife or wife of one husband (1Tim 3:2).  
weak 0 ... 1 ... 2 ... 3 ... 4 ... 5 ... 6 ... 7 ... 8 ... 9 ... 10 strong
  - (a) If married...
    - i. I am a committed spouse to my partner.
    - ii. I am not flirtatious.
    - iii. I am committed to meeting the needs of my marriage partner physically, emotionally and spiritually.
    - iv. I enjoy my spouse's company and speak tenderly and gently to him or her.
    - v. I develop and maintain an atmosphere of encouragement and acceptance through continual affirmation.



- vi. I love my spouse deeply and express that love in every possible way.
  - vii. My marriage exhibits the grace of God.
  - viii. I have one spouse (a member of the opposite sex).
  - ix. I am not physically or mentally promiscuous.
- (b) If single...
- i. I am not promiscuous and I am not overly attracted to other people.
  - ii. I am not a philanderer and I do not constantly eye the opposite sex.
- (c) My physical and mental life is pure.
- i. I do not allow myself to have sexual fantasies.
  - ii. I do not look at pornography.
3. I am temperate (1Tim 3:2).  
weak 0 .... 1 .... 2 .... 3 .... 4 .... 5 .... 6 .... 7 .... 8 .... 9 .... 10 strong
- (a) I am someone who is not carried away to extremes, but whose life is marked by balance and stability.
  - (b) I am not swayed by adulation nor crushed by criticism.
  - (c) I am not volatile but even-tempered.
  - (d) I am not carried away by power, title, or position.
  - (e) I am a well-balanced, well-adjusted person who is not flighty or nervous.
  - (f) I do not constantly jump from one thing or project to another.
  - (g) I do not overdo anything in my life.
  - (h) My life is balanced.
  - (i) I am not excessive in any area of my life.
4. I am sensible (1Tim 3:2).  
weak 0 .... 1 .... 2 .... 3 .... 4 .... 5 .... 6 .... 7 .... 8 .... 9 .... 10 strong
- (a) I am a prudent person whose judgment enables me to discern the effects of extremes.
  - (b) The foundation of the decision making process in my life is humility, a recognition of God's grace and a desire to be a good steward of what God has given.
  - (c) I have committed my position as subordinate to God's authority and my prudence is seen in my continuing commitment to make God look good and never myself.
  - (d) I show good judgment in my life and I have a proper perspective regarding my abilities and myself.
  - (e) I don't take myself too seriously.
  - (f) I am self-controlled.
  - (g) My life is pretty much level and steady.
  - (h) Inner peace governs my life.
5. I am modest (1Tim 3:2).  
weak 0 .... 1 .... 2 .... 3 .... 4 .... 5 .... 6 .... 7 .... 8 .... 9 .... 10 strong
- (a) I repay no one evil for evil.
  - (b) I respect what is honorable.
  - (c) I am at peace with all as much as it lies with me.
  - (d) Whatever things are true, honorable, just, pure, lovely, of good report, virtuous and praiseworthy, I think on these things.
  - (e) I work with quietness and eat my own bread.
  - (f) I lead a quiet life, and do my own business, and work with my own hands.
6. I am hospitable, given to hospitality (1Tim 3:2; Tit 1:8).  
weak 0 .... 1 .... 2 .... 3 .... 4 .... 5 .... 6 .... 7 .... 8 .... 9 .... 10 strong

- (a) I understand that what I enjoy in stewardship is really a gift from God and that my role is a custodian of His resources.
- (b) I administer these resources given to me by God in such a way as to reflect the character of God.
- (c) I use my home for the benefit of others to show God's love and display a freedom from the accursed love of possessing.
- (d) I have come to terms with the difference between earthly possessions, which are temporary, and spiritual possessions, which are eternal.
- (e) I use my home and resources as a place and opportunity to serve and minister to Christians and non-Christians.
- (f) As the Holy Spirit leads, I open my home to strangers and to the people of the church.
7. I am good at teaching, holding to the faithful word which is according to the teaching (1Tim 3:2; Tit 1:9).  
weak 0 .... 1 .... 2 .... 3 .... 4 .... 5 .... 6 .... 7 .... 8 .... 9 .... 10 strong
- (a) I have a teachable spirit, modeling God's truth in a humble and sensitive way. I am not quarrelsome but kind, patient and gentle, especially in correcting those who are in opposition.
- (b) I am secure in Christ and secure in myself and in control of my personality (mind, will and emotions).
- (c) I love God's Word and live by it and eager to help others understand the freedom of its principles.
- (d) Others would say that I am an encourager, not a discourager.
- (e) When I teach God's Word, I show an aptitude for handling the Scriptures with care and reasonable skill.
- (f) I have a good understanding of the essential, foundational truths of God's Word.
- (g) I am able to communicate the Scriptures to others in such a way that they "see" God and not me.
- (h) I am able to gently and firmly correct those who are misusing God's Word and recognize error when it appears.
8. I am not a drinker, not given to wine (1Tim 3:3; Tit 1:7).  
weak 0 .... 1 .... 2 .... 3 .... 4 .... 5 .... 6 .... 7 .... 8 .... 9 .... 10 strong
- (a) I understand that this quality has to do with inappropriate use more than a requirement to abstain from alcoholic beverages.
- (b) I have learned to control my body and appetites so that I am not driven by any desires where excess would be perceived as improper behavior.
- (c) I understand that any overindulgence could corrupt and cause another brother or sister to stumble in their walk of faith and as such, is always avoided because the welfare of the body of Christ is of higher importance than my personal freedoms.
- (d) I am careful to encourage rather than discourage people in their walk with God.
- (e) I am not addicted to alcohol or drugs of any kind. The Holy Spirit controls me - I am sober in my spirit.
- (f) If I do drink alcoholic beverages or indulge in other legally acceptable but potentially addictive practices, I do so in moderation, never violating known, legal standards or God's commandments.
- (g) I do not overindulge in anything.
- (h) I fully understand that my body is not my own and is representative of the temple of God.
9. I am not violent, quarrelsome or easily angered (1Tim 3:3; Tit 1:7).  
weak 0 .... 1 .... 2 .... 3 .... 4 .... 5 .... 6 .... 7 .... 8 .... 9 .... 10 strong
- (a) I know that physical violence will never mark a mature Christian.
- (b) I understand that to be pugnacious is to exercise an uncontrolled personal vindictiveness toward another person, taking the form of physical attacks or even verbal or emotional abuse.
- (c) I deal wisely with offenses that might otherwise result in abusing the offender.
- (d) I am not someone who criticizes or attacks another person, family, business, or ministry either verbally or physically in any way.
- (e) I do not resort to verbal, physical, emotional, intellectual, or spiritual abuse or violence.

- (f) I do not engage in gossip or defame another person's character.
- (g) I do not do or say anything that would destroy unity.
- (h) I am not threatened by competition.
- (i) I am willing to bend and compromise when necessary.
- (j) I lead with a servant's heart and do not resort to an authoritarian style of leadership.
- (k) I am not argumentative.
- (l) I am not divisive.
- (m) A spirit of competition does not drive me.
- (n) I am someone who upholds peace.

10. I am not greedy for money nor dishonest gain, and I do not covet (1Tim 3:3; Tit 1:7).  
weak 0 .... 1 .... 2 .... 3 .... 4 .... 5 .... 6 .... 7 .... 8 .... 9 .... 10 strong

- (a) I am free from the love of money; my priorities are straight.
- (b) I seek first God's kingdom and I see things as gifts from God.
- (c) I am not devastated by the loss of things.
- (d) I hold everything loosely and live by heavenly values.
- (e) I have learned the meaning of contentment; like Paul, I know how to be content in every circumstance.
- (f) My happiness is not the result of material possessions.
- (g) I am not allured by money.
- (h) I have achieved a balance between excessive frugality and excessive spending.
- (i) I do not find my security in money.
- (j) I do not measure other people by material things or by external measurements; like God, I look at the heart.
- (k) I am not lazy but a diligent worker realizing that even my employment is a gift from God.
- (l) I believe God owns everything and that I am simply a manager of His resources.
- (m) I am not money-hungry; I do not hoard up money.
- (n) I do not spend an inordinate amount of time and resource attempting to make a lot of money.
- (o) I am not attracted to get-rich-quick schemes.
- (p) I fully believe that God is my provider.
- (q) I have no problem disclosing my finances with more spiritually mature believers.
- (r) Others recognize me as a giver.

11. I am gentle (1Tim 3:3).  
weak 0 .... 1 .... 2 .... 3 .... 4 .... 5 .... 6 .... 7 .... 8 .... 9 .... 10 strong

- (a) Others regard me as mild-mannered, characterized by meekness, forbearance and a servant's heart.
- (b) I act and speak gently so that people are actually relaxed in my presence.
- (c) I listen more than I speak.
- (d) I am able to resolve problems without losing control of my emotions.
- (e) I am not viewed as being authoritarian.
- (f) I never retaliate when wronged.
- (g) I have such a high view of other people that I would never abuse or take advantage of others.
- (h) I am solution-oriented rather than problem-oriented.
- (i) I am a kind, modest, patient person who does not insist on my rights.
- (j) I am not someone who resorts to any form of violence (verbal, physical, emotional, spiritual).

12. I rule my house well (1Tim 3:4).  
weak 0 .... 1 .... 2 .... 3 .... 4 .... 5 .... 6 .... 7 .... 8 .... 9 .... 10 strong

- (a) If married...
  - i. If I am a husband, I love my wife as Christ loves the church, and I honor her as the weaker vessel and as a joint heir of the inheritance.
  - ii. If I am a wife, I submit to my husband as the Church submits to Christ.
  - iii. All members of my family are taught to have a mutual respect and love for each other.
  - iv. I have a well-managed family and home life.
  - v. My children are taught to be obedient and courteous in their responses.
  - vi. I do not avoid family problems, but I gently and lovingly address my family concerns.
  - vii. I address problems head-on.
- (b) If single...
  - i. My home is well managed.
  - ii. I address problems head-on.
  - iii. I am a good steward of God's resources.
- (c) My home is an expression of God's love and peace.
- (d) My home reflects the character of God.

13. I am not a new convert (1Tim 3:6).

weak 0 ... 1 ... 2 ... 3 ... 4 ... 5 ... 6 ... 7 ... 8 ... 9 ... 10 strong

- (a) I have learned the full effect of pride and other sins of the heart and how to cope with them.
- (b) I understand that pride includes a thirst for attention and recognition and that immature believers are more susceptible to this, especially in positions of leadership.
- (c) I have been tested and proven morally and ethically by my life-style and the handling of relationships.
- (d) I understand that learning and applying Biblical principles and heavenly wisdom takes time.
- (e) I understand that some will do it more quickly than others.
- (f) I do not depend upon my strength to bring forth success.
- (g) I do not control others to get my way.
- (h) I do not manipulate, intimidate, or dominate others in any way.
- (i) I do not count upon my personality, my magnetism, my education, my finances or my intelligence to achieve what I think God wants.
- (j) I have learned that God works with people of a humble and a contrite heart, who have learned not to exalt themselves.
- (k) I am a servant to all, trusting in Christ.

14. I am blameless as God's steward (Tit 1:7, 8).

weak 0 ... 1 ... 2 ... 3 ... 4 ... 5 ... 6 ... 7 ... 8 ... 9 ... 10 strong

- (a) I have been tested through time and shown to be blameless.
- (b) He reconciled me in the body of His flesh through death, to present me holy, without defect, and blameless before Himself.
- (c) I keep His commandment without spot, blameless until His coming.
- (d) I behave myself holy, righteous and blameless before other believers.
- (e) I am blameless and harmless, a child of God without defect in a perverse generation, among whom I am a light in the world, holding up the word of life.
- (f) I am diligent to be found in peace, without defect and blameless in His sight.
- (g) I stand blameless before God and man.

15. I am not self-pleasing (Tit 1:7).

weak 0 ... 1 ... 2 ... 3 ... 4 ... 5 ... 6 ... 7 ... 8 ... 9 ... 10 strong

- (a) I am not self-willed and I easily submit to legitimate authorities in my life.

- (b) I am recognized as a team player.
- (c) I readily admit when I am wrong, gladly forgive and hold other people in high esteem.
- (d) I am more oriented toward others than myself.
- (e) I practice an honest piety rather than a pretentious self-righteousness.
- (f) I am secure in myself and do not have to continually validate or justify myself in the eyes of others.
- (g) I am not stubborn, arrogant, domineering, or controlling.
- (h) Others find it easy to discuss their opinions and seek my counsel because they realize I attempt to be impartial and fair.

16. I am a lover of good (Tit 1:8).

weak 0 .... 1 .... 2 .... 3 .... 4 .... 5 .... 6 .... 7 .... 8 .... 9 .... 10 strong

- (a) I do not seek anything but what is good in the sight of God.
- (b) I focus my every day on what is good.
- (c) I love the things that honor God; I hate what God hates.
- (d) I entirely agree with God's Word.

17. I am fair (Tit1:8).

weak 0 .... 1 .... 2 .... 3 .... 4 .... 5 .... 6 .... 7 .... 8 .... 9 .... 10 strong

- (a) I am known as being fair in my dealings with people and am always concerned that others perceive me as fair.
- (b) I am concerned about giving a fair day's work for a fair day's pay.
- (c) I am concerned that each transaction in my life is fair to all concerned.
- (d) I am respected and capable of making wise judgments and regarded as spiritually mature by those in my community.

18. I am holy (Tit1:8).

weak 0 .... 1 .... 2 .... 3 .... 4 .... 5 .... 6 .... 7 .... 8 .... 9 .... 10 strong

- (a) I go through life with a moment-by-moment awareness of the presence of God.
- (b) My life is marked by a love for God that embraces each activity in life through the lens of God's Kingdom.
- (c) I am always sensitive to sin and avoid unholy behavior, while at the same time I enjoy being salt and light in the world.
- (d) I deal immediately and decisively with sin in my life.
  - i. I confess my sin, trusting Him to forgive it and cleanse me from all unrighteousness.
  - ii. I repent from my sin, turning from the sin and to the Lord.
  - iii. I approach the throne of grace boldly to get help in time of need.
  - iv. I determine before the throne of grace to put off the sin and walk as a new creation.
  - v. I do these things every time I sin, whether outwardly or in my heart.

19. I am sober-minded (Tit 1:8).

weak 0 .... 1 .... 2 .... 3 .... 4 .... 5 .... 6 .... 7 .... 8 .... 9 .... 10 strong

- (a) I do not sleep spiritually but watch since I belong to the day.
- (b) I watch carefully how I walk.
- (c) I carefully abstain from any and all things that could cause harm to my body, mind, or spirit.
- (d) I fully believe and practice moderation in all things knowing that my life and body are not mine, but belong to God.
- (e) I live a disciplined life.
- (f) I am a devout person. My life is generally pleasing to God.
- (g) I walk in the Spirit with the demonstrated evidence that my life is servant-like and selfless (John 13:34, 35).

20. I am self-controlled (Tit 1:8).

weak 0 .... 1 .... 2 .... 3 .... 4 .... 5 .... 6 .... 7 .... 8 .... 9 .... 10 strong

- (a) I am a person who lives so as to be respected by others.
- (b) I have a well-ordered life which, when interfacing with others, attracts them rather than repels them.
- (c) I am perceived as being winsome and my life adorns the Gospel; it does not detract from it.
- (d) Because my life is ordered, it reflects that God is a God of order.
- (e) As a respectable person, others find my being with them a joy and a blessing.
- (f) I conduct my life, work, and ministry in an honorable way, and people have and show respect for me.
- (g) My life is orderly and not helter-skelter.
- (h) I am aware of what's going on around me and I am not overly moved by life's events and circumstances.
- (i) I am in control of my own spirit.
- (j) I am under control.
- (k) I do not lose control to the point that I scream at another or strike another or cause harm to another person or their property.

## 2.7 Rating yourself

Put your score here: [\_\_\_\_\_]

### 2.7.1 Your spiritual maturity

Your score	Maturity	Needs
0-40	Spiritual baby	Needs love, protection, pure milk of the word.
41-110	Spiritual child	Needs messes cleaned, protection, taught to overcome sin.
111-155	Spiritual young adult	Needs a vision, taught to overcome the devil and the world.
156-200	Spiritual parent	Needs spiritual children, mentored to dream God's dream.

## Part III

# Reproducible process for discipleship

# Chapter 3

## Create an environment for growth

### 3.1 Relational environment

#### 3.1.1 Must be "caught" as well as taught

##### 3.1.1.1 Two or three are better than one

Discipleship is not one person mentoring another person in the things of God. Discipleship is men and/or women walking together in a small cluster of three or four people, encouraging each other, loving each other, and being accountable to each other. Some call this an inner circle or a CORE.<sup>1</sup>

We are certainly not called to walk alone. We should walk with at least one other person, especially when we are going into ministry. In my opinion, we are called to walk, as Jesus walked, with a small group of men and/or women. Jesus had His inner circle of Peter, James and John (four men walking together). Paul had several inner circles. These small groups, living life together, accountable to each other, is how God intends for us to get life and overcome. Since we are in a war, we need at least two other people walking together with us, as a threefold cord is not quickly broken.

Ecclesiastes 4:9-12 (WEB)

9. **Two are better than one**, because they have a good reward for their labor.
10. For if they fall, the one will lift up his fellow; but woe to him who is alone when he falls, and doesn't have another to lift him up.
11. Again, if two lie together, then they have warmth; but how can one keep warm alone?
12. **If a man prevails against one who is alone, two shall withstand him; and a threefold cord is not quickly broken.**

Mark 6:7 (WEB)

7. He called to himself the twelve, and began to send them **out two by two**; and he gave them authority over the unclean spirits.

Acts 13:1-3 (WEB)

1. Now in the assembly that was at Antioch there were some prophets and teachers: Barnabas, Simeon who was called Niger, Lucius of Cyrene, Manaen the foster brother of Herod the tetrarch, and Saul.
2. As they served the Lord and fasted, the Holy Spirit said, "Separate **Barnabas and Saul** for me, for the work to which I have called them."
3. Then, when they had fasted and prayed and laid their hands on them, they sent them away.

---

<sup>1</sup>Doug Morrell, <http://corediscipleship.org/>



### 3.1.2 Relationship makes the message real

Our message is that you can have eternal life in Jesus. But you are not just living forever on your own, however you want to live. You are knit to other people and serving God together.

John 13:34-35 (WEB)

34. A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another. Just **as I have loved you, you also love one another.**

35. By this everyone will know that you are my disciples, if you have love for one another.”

### 3.1.3 Requirements for relational environment

#### 3.1.3.1 Real teaching

Teaching is important. Real teaching is teaching which is practical, systematic, and modeled by older Christians. It is given in sincerity and with impeccable character.

John 17:17 (WEB)

17. Sanctify them in your truth. **Your word is truth.**

Matthew 4:4 (WEB)

4. But he answered, “It is written, ‘Man shall not live by bread alone, but by **every word** that proceeds out of God’s mouth.’”

Psalms 119:105 (WEB)

105. NUN Your word is a **lamp** to my feet, and a **light** for my path.

Psalms 119:11 (WEB)

11. I have **hidden your word** in my heart, that I might not sin against you.

Ephesians 6:17 (WEB)

17. And take the helmet of salvation, and the **sword of the Spirit**, which is **the word of God**;

#### 3.1.3.2 Shepherding

Everyone, especially the spiritual young, need protection. Shepherds protect people. It is not just the job of a few leaders to be pastors, to shepherd people. It is the job of everyone to care and protect people.

John 10:10 (WEB)

10. The **thief** only comes to **steal, kill, and destroy**. I came that they may have life, and may have it abundantly.

1 Peter 5:8 (WEB)

8. Be sober and self-controlled. Be **watchful**. Your adversary, **the devil, walks around like a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour.**

Ezekiel 34:2-5 (WMB)

2. “Son of man, prophesy against the shepherds of Israel. Prophesy, and tell them, even the shepherds, ‘The Lord GOD says: “Woe to the shepherds of Israel who feed themselves! Shouldn’t the **shepherds feed the sheep?**”

3. You eat the fat. You clothe yourself with the wool. You kill the fatlings, but you don’t feed the sheep.

4. You haven’t **strengthened the diseased**. You haven’t **healed that which was sick**. You haven’t **bound up that which was broken**. You haven’t **brought back that which was driven away**. You haven’t **sought that which was lost**, but you have ruled over them with force and with rigor.

5. They were scattered, because there was no shepherd. They became food to all the animals of the field, and were scattered.

### 3.1.3.3 Transparency

This is best created in a safe, authentic atmosphere. If we are transparent, and walk in the light, we can have fellowship with Him, fellowship with one another, and we will be thoroughly cleansed from all sin.

1 John 1:5-8 (WEB)

5. This is the message which we have heard from him and announce to you, that **God is light, and in him is no darkness at all.**
6. If we say that **we have fellowship with him** and walk in the darkness, we lie, and don't tell the truth.
7. But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we **have fellowship with one another**, and the **blood of Jesus Christ, his Son, cleanses us from all sin.**
8. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.

This transparency is dependent on leadership building a culture of trust. People need to know that if they sin, they can come to leadership and leadership will forgive them and help them, as many times as it takes. Leadership will do this in a spirit of gentleness. The law is not for God's people, to use as a bludgeon to pound people on the head who don't tow the line. The law is for the lawless; God's people need to be restored gently. And the forgiveness required "seven times seventy" times is required for a brother who sins, and it is required from the Church as much as it is required from each individual.

1 Timothy 1:8-10 (WEB)

8. But we know that **the law is good, if a person uses it lawfully,**
9. as knowing this, that **law is not made for a righteous person, but for the lawless and insubordinate, for the ungodly and sinners, for the unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,**
10. for the **sexually immoral, for homosexuals, for slave-traders, for liars, for perjurers, and for any other thing contrary to the sound doctrine,**

Galatians 6:1-5 (WEB)

1. Brothers, even **if a man is caught in some fault, you who are spiritual must restore such a one in a spirit of gentleness;** looking to yourself so that you also aren't tempted.
2. **Bear one another's burdens,** and so fulfill the law of Christ.
3. For if a man **thinks himself to be something when he is nothing, he deceives himself.**
4. But let each man examine his own work, and then he will have reason to boast in himself, and not in someone else.
5. For each man will bear his own burden.

Matthew 18:21-35 (WEB)

21. Then Peter came and said to him, "Lord, **how often shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him?** Until seven times?"
22. Jesus said to him, "I don't tell you until seven times, but, **until seventy times seven.**
23. Therefore the Kingdom of Heaven is like a certain king, who wanted to reconcile accounts with his servants.
24. When he had begun to reconcile, one was brought to him who owed him ten thousand talents.
25. But because he couldn't pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, with his wife, his children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.
26. The servant therefore fell down and knelt before him, saying, 'Lord, have patience with me, and I will repay you all!'
27. The lord of that servant, being moved with compassion, released him, and forgave him the debt.

28. “But that servant went out, and found one of his fellow servants, who owed him one hundred denarii, and he grabbed him, and took him by the throat, saying, ‘Pay me what you owe!’
29. “So his fellow servant fell down at his feet and begged him, saying, ‘Have patience with me, and I will repay you!’
30. He would not, but went and cast him into prison, until he should pay back that which was due.
31. So **when his fellow servants saw what was done, they were exceedingly sorry**, and came and told their lord all that was done.
32. Then his lord called him in, and said to him, ‘You wicked servant! I forgave you all that debt, because you begged me.
33. Shouldn’t you also have had mercy on your fellow servant, even as I had mercy on you?’
34. His lord was angry, and delivered him to the tormentors, until he should pay all that was due to him.
35. So my heavenly Father will also do to you, if you don’t each forgive your brother from your hearts for his misdeeds.”

So, do we deal with sin in the Church? Absolutely. But we don’t deal harshly with those who are trying to overcome sin. We work with them, as much as it takes, so they can overcome sin and walk as children of the Lord. We also communicate with them that it is better to get their sin out in the open so it can be dealt with. As long as a person is repenting, turning from sin and turning to God, we will walk with them to get them free.

If they refuse to repent of sin, we apply Church discipline. Then, if they repent, we forgive them and welcome them back. Our culture needs to be one of truly overcoming sin in the inward man, not one of self-righteousness based on externals. And if we are going to truly overcome sin in the inward parts, we need to be able to get help to walk out of it.

#### 3.1.3.4 Accountability

Spiritual growth requires authenticity and accountability. As disciples walking together, we protect each other from the deceitfulness of sin.

Hebrews 3:12-13 (WEB)

12. Beware, brothers, lest perhaps there might be in any one of you an evil heart of unbelief, in falling away from the living God;
13. but **exhort one another day by day**, so long as it is called “today”, **lest any one of you be hardened** by the deceitfulness of sin.

#### 3.1.3.5 Guided practice

Apprenticing any complex task requires guided practice. Jesus modeled the behavior He expected from His disciples. He explained His actions and His words to them. He provided correction, encouragement and inspiration. When they were ready, He sent them out before Him to do the work, and debriefed them after.

- You watch, I do
- Let’s do it together
- You do, I watch
- You continue to do, and I am available to answer questions and for support

#### 3.1.3.6 Bible study

In this section I provide some insight into Bible study. For every section listed below, there is a subsection titled “Biblical needs for...” These are biblical truths that I think the person in that stage needs to master before they go on to the next stage. These are also the truths that I expect the person facilitating the CORE group to have mastered as he or she models them for the members. The best way to master these truths is to study them in the Bible and discuss how to live them. These are my suggestions for Bible study.

**What Bible should I use?** I suggest you use a King James Bible, a New King James Bible or an Updated King James Bible for your study. Why? The reason is not trivial, and it would take a deep-dive into Bible translation to explain it fully. Essentially, the Bibles like the NASB and the ESV were translated from a different set of manuscripts than the KJV equivalents. These manuscripts are older, so they are presumed to be more accurate than those used to translate the KJV family of Bibles. The presumption is that the older manuscripts, being closer to the time the Bible was written, have not undergone transformations in copying due to errors or intentional alterations. The manuscripts, when they wore out and needed to be replaced, were hand copied. It is assumed that errors were introduced in the manuscripts used to translate the KJV family of Bibles as they are newer, and that the older manuscripts, being less changed are more accurate.

I beg to differ with the scholars, typically liberal scholars, who make this assessment. First, implicit in this discussion is the misguided idea that the Church Fathers in the first few hundred years of Christianity did not know about these other manuscripts. However, that is not true. They knew about them, they simply *chose not to use them*. My opinion is they chose not to use them because they felt the manuscripts were not as accurate or not to be trusted. So, my belief is that the newer manuscripts used to translate the KJV family of Bibles are newer because the Church Fathers had more confidence in those manuscripts. Those manuscripts were used more, wore out more quickly, and needed to be replaced more often. Also, the idea that monks – whose sole job, whose very life, was to recreate the cherished scriptures on new manuscripts – would allow mistakes into the new manuscripts, or worse, introduce changes intentionally, is absurd, in my opinion. These were people who devoted their entire lives to maintaining and copying the original manuscripts of Holy Scripture. They would not have changed the Scripture, and they would not have allowed mistakes to be introduced in copying the Scripture, as much as humanly possible. The Dead Sea Scrolls illustrates this in the newer manuscripts we have of the portions of the Old Testament for which there are older Dead Sea representatives.

Am I saying that anyone who studies the NIV, the NASB, the ESV, or any others of these Bibles are going to miss out on doctrinally important truths? No. The translators of those Bibles have been careful to include the portions which were not in the older manuscripts in their Bibles, but they have notes which say that the oldest manuscripts do not include these verses. I say this with one caveat. The newest approach to writing the NIV Bible has introduced modern political correctness, and those Bibles are to be shunned. Specifically, the translators have tried to make the NIV gender neutral. This movement of gender neutrality is a modern movement, not a Scriptural movement. Trying to translate the Bible to accommodate this modern movement is straight-up *evil* and *destructive*. I strongly suggest you avoid outright any NIV-type Bible until the publisher repents of altering sacred Scripture to accommodate modern values.

**How do I study?** Each part of the “Biblical needs...” sections below look something like the following:

Matthew 18:11-14

*Jesus came to seek the lost, like the shepherd in the parable of 100 sheep.*

*It is not the will of the Father in heaven that one of these little ones should perish.*

Mark 1:35-39; Luke 4:42-44

*Jesus came so he could preach in all the towns of Israel.*

So, to study this, I would look in the Bible at Mt 18:11-14:

Matthew 18:11-14 (UKJV)

11. For the Son of man has come to save that which was lost.
12. How think all of you? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, does he not leave the ninety and nine, and goes into the mountains, and seeks that which is gone astray?
13. And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoices more of that sheep, than of the ninety and nine which went not astray.
14. Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

Then use the SOAP method to study it. SOAP is a simple, intuitive method to study the Bible. All it requires is a Bible, a pen or pencil, and a notebook or journal. SOAP is an acronym.

S - Scripture

Write out the passage in your notebook or journal. Yes, write it all. If the portion of passage is long, then I suggest you break it up into more than one SOAP sessions or you choose a few verses which speak to you specifically and write those.

#### O - Observation

Write out your observations about the passage. Here you are simply observing, you are not drawing conclusions yet. For example, in the above passage, Jesus clearly came to save the lost, He is willing to leave the ninety-nine to seek out the lost, like any good shepherd would do, and it is not the will of the Father that one of the lost should perish.

#### A - Application

Here you consider how you might apply this to your life. So, based on this scripture: Well, as a follower of Jesus, I am called to do what He does, so I am called to seek out the lost and bring them to Jesus. Since He left the ninety-nine to do this, I should do the same. Finally, since it is not the Father's will that any of these should perish, and I am here to do the Father's will, I need to do everything in my power to keep the lost from perishing, like pray and believe the Father for open doors to share with lost people.

#### P - Prayer

Finally, you write out a prayer. If the Holy Spirit has shown you sin in your life, confess it, repent of it, go to the throne of grace to get help overcoming it, and determine you will not live in the sin anymore. Yes, you need to write all that down. Also, you need to pray anything else that comes up in your heart because of the passage. "Lord, I have been fearful to share your word with people. I ask you to forgive me and cleanse me of the unrighteousness. I turn from that in my heart and I turn to you. I need your grace and your Holy Spirit to overcome this. Before your throne of grace I confess that I will believe you and trust you in this, and I will share with unbelievers. Please change my heart and give me courage. Open doors for me to have opportunities to share. And if there is anyone who is hungry for you and needs to hear the gospel, bring them my way and give me the wisdom to minister to them. Amen." And so on.

Do this for one Scripture in every section listed in the Biblical needs section. Notice in the second part of the section listed above that Mark 1:35-39 and Luke 4:42-44 are listed. You can read both or chose one, and do SOAP with that. This is still quite a few sections of Scripture - most of the New Testament, in fact. But it is an excellent way to get a quick introduction to the core truths and activities of the disciple's lifestyle.

This is an excellent way to study the Bible. Some claim that it is not really good, because it doesn't facilitate studying passages in the context of other passages, and the student is likely to make observations and apply the Scriptures in ways which are not appropriate. However, this is a silly objection, because it is true of any other kind of study. It is true of simply reading the Bible (which I suggest you do regularly), of Inductive Bible study, of Deductive Bible study, and of any other kind of Bible study you can imagine. As you get more experienced in understanding Scripture, simply go back through your journal and correct those misdirected or misguided beliefs that you adopted as a result of your study. This is the same thing you would do using any kind of Bible study as a scholar of the Bible. If this is truly a concern, here is how you address it. Notice in the Biblical needs sections, there are a great many scripture references and then statements which are derived from those references. If you **make sure that your observations and applications do not disagree with those statements**, you will be okay. The statements after each reference are based on a multi-year study I did of the New Testament designed to synthesize the core teachings of Christianity from the New Testament.<sup>2</sup> These statements of truth are made within the context of the New Testament as a whole.

Regardless of where you are on the continuum from unbeliever to mature disciple, you should master the Biblical needs sections for your current level and for all the levels before. When I say master, I mean understand the truths, apply them to your life (live it) and model them for others (be light and salt). You don't have to have a deep theological understanding of these things. A simple understanding rooted in the basic message of the Bible is all you need. Then, pattern your life around the truths as you understand them, because it is doers of the word which are pleasing to God, not hearers only. It is not the amount of Scripture that you *know* that shows your maturity; it is the amount of Scripture that you *obey* that displays your maturity. If you walk this way, you will grow, you will be productive and fruitful, and you will change the world for Jesus.

<sup>2</sup>See <https://www.greatcommissioncellchurch.org/TraditionsOfTheEarlyChurch.pdf> or <https://www.greatcommissioncellchurch.org/Traditions-short.pdf> for more detail.

## 3.2 Reproducible process

The following is the process for discipleship in seed form in Luke 5:1-11.

### 3.2.1 Share

You will share your time, your love and acceptance with unbelievers and baby Christians. You will believe the Lord to share Christ with the lost and get them connected to Jesus. Those who accept Christ and are born again are little babies for a season. You will share your love and protection with them, gentle and tender, making sure their every need is met.

Luke 5:1-3 (WEB)

1. Now while the multitude pressed on him and heard the word of God, he was standing by the lake of Gennesaret.
2. He saw two boats standing by the lake, but the fishermen had gone out of them, and were washing their nets.
3. He entered into one of the boats, which was Simon's, and asked him to put out a little from the land. **He sat down and taught the multitudes** from the boat.

### 3.2.2 Connect

You will connect little children with others. You will walk with them, teach them to overcome sin, and teach them to look outside of themselves and connect with their brothers and sisters.

Luke 5:4-7 (WEB)

4. When he had finished speaking, he said to Simon, "**Put out into the deep, and let down your nets for a catch.**"
5. Simon answered him, "**Master, we worked all night, and took nothing; but at your word I will let down the net.**"
6. When they had done this, they **caught a great multitude of fish**, and their net was breaking.
7. They beckoned to their partners in the other boat, that they should come and help them. They came, and filled both boats, so that they began to sink.

### 3.2.3 Minister

You will bring spiritually young adults to minister. You will help them grow in the word, grow in their prayer life, and grow in fighting the enemy. Then, you will help them find ministry opportunities where they will continue to grow in service of others.

Luke 5:8-10 (WEB)

8. But **Simon Peter**, when he saw it, **fell down at Jesus' knees**, saying, "Depart from me, for I am a sinful man, Lord."
9. For **he was amazed, and all who were with him**, at the catch of fish which they had caught;
10. and so also were James and John, sons of Zebedee, who were partners with Simon. Jesus said to Simon, "**Don't be afraid. From now on you will be catching people alive.**"

### 3.2.4 Disciple

Finally, you will model the spiritual reproduction process for spiritual adults. You will show them how to bring someone to Christ, how to help them grow to spiritual adulthood, and how to be reproducing parents themselves. Once they are able to work through the process with others, you watch them as they do the work. Then, you commit to walking with them as fellow disciples and fellow workers for Christ.

Luke 5:11 (WEB)

11. When they had brought their boats to land, **they left everything, and followed him.**

For different stages, from unbeliever to parent, you bring the person through aspects of the Share, Connect, Minister, Disciple (SCMD) cycle, depending on where they are. At a macro level, you share with the spiritually dead and with spiritual babies, you connect with little children, you plug young adults into ministry opportunities and you release spiritual parents to reproduce through discipleship. Within each category, you use this cycle to get them raised up until they are Spiritual Adults. Through all the stages, you teach them how to share, how to connect, how to minister, and how to disciple and live as disciples.

### 3.2.5 The process in the New Testament

#### 3.2.5.1 Barnabas walked with Paul

Acts 11:22-26 (WEB)

22. The report concerning them came to the ears of the assembly which was in Jerusalem. They sent out **Barnabas to go as far as Antioch,**
23. who, when he had come, and had **seen the grace of God**, was glad. He exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they should remain near to the Lord.
24. For he was a good man, and full of the Holy Spirit and of faith, and many people were added to the Lord.
25. **Barnabas went out to Tarsus to look for Saul.**
26. When he had found him, **he brought him to Antioch.** For a whole year they were gathered together with the assembly, and taught many people. **The disciples were first called Christians in Antioch.**

#### 3.2.5.2 Barnabas did the same for Mark

Acts 15:36-39 (WEB)

36. After some days Paul said to Barnabas, "Let's return now and visit our brothers in every city in which we proclaimed the word of the Lord, to see how they are doing."
37. **Barnabas planned to take John, who was called Mark**, with them also.
38. But **Paul didn't think that it was a good idea** to take with them someone who had withdrawn from them in Pamphylia, and didn't go with them to do the work.
39. Then **the contention grew so sharp that they separated** from each other. Barnabas took Mark with him and sailed away to Cyprus,

#### 3.2.5.3 Paul walked with Titus, Timothy, Luke, Silas, and others

Galatians 2:1 (WEB)

1. Then after a period of fourteen years I went up again to **Jerusalem with Barnabas, taking Titus** also with me.

Galatians 2:3 (WEB)

3. But not even **Titus**, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised.

2 Corinthians 8:16 (WEB)

16. But thanks be to God, who puts the same earnest care for you into the heart of **Titus.**

2 Corinthians 8:23 (WEB)

23. As for **Titus**, he is **my partner and fellow worker** for you. As for **our brothers, they are the apostles of the assemblies**, the glory of Christ.

2 Thessalonians 1:1 (WEB)

1. **Paul, Silvanus, and Timothy**, to the assembly of the Thessalonians in God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ:

1 Thessalonians 3:6 (WEB)

6. But when **Timothy** came just now to us from you, and brought us glad news of your faith and love, and that you have good memories of us always, longing to see us, even as we also long to see you,

2 Timothy 4:11 (WEB)

11. Only **Luke is with me. Take Mark, and bring him with you, for he is useful to me for service.**

Philemon 1:24 (WEB)

24. as do **Mark, Aristarchus, Demas, and Luke, my fellow workers.**

Acts 17:14-15 (WEB)

14. Then the brothers immediately sent out **Paul** to go as far as to the sea, and **Silas and Timothy** still stayed there.
15. But those who escorted Paul brought him as far as Athens. Receiving a commandment to **Silas and Timothy that they should come to him very quickly**, they departed.

Acts 18:5 (WEB)

5. But when **Silas and Timothy came down from Macedonia, Paul** was compelled by the Spirit, testifying to the Jews that Jesus was the Christ.

This wasn't just Paul discipling these people. This was Paul, walking with them, being a disciple of Jesus with them, himself being discipled by Jesus as he walked with these men. This is the principle that we need to impart to people as we walk with them. They are not our disciples, they are disciples of Jesus, and we walk with them as disciples of Jesus ourselves.

### 3.2.5.4 Paul encouraged his team to reproduce the process in others

2 Timothy 2:2 (WEB)

2. The things which you have **heard from me** among many witnesses, **commit** the same things to **faithful men**, who will be **able to teach others** also.

## 3.2.6 Only do our part

For each discipleship relationship we have with others, there is God's part, their part and our part. We can only do our part.

### 3.2.6.1 God's part

- God draws them to Himself
- God changes their hearts
- We are a tool in His hands

God's part is to continue to work in us for His good pleasure as we follow and obey Him. God's part is to work in them.

Philippians 2:13 (WEB)

13. For it is **God who works in you** both to will and to work, for his good pleasure.



**3.2.6.2 Our part**

- We must be a willing tool in God's hands
- We must ask God to help us see opportunities
- We must make the most of opportunities by
  - sharing
  - connecting
  - training for ministry
  - releasing as disciples to disciple others

Colossians 4:2-6 (WEB)

2. Continue **steadfastly in prayer**, watching in it with thanksgiving,
3. praying together for us also, that God may open to us a door for the word, to speak the mystery of Christ, for which I am also in bonds,
4. that I may reveal it as I ought to speak.
5. **Walk in wisdom** toward those who are outside, **redeeming the time**.
6. Let your **speech** always be **with grace, seasoned with salt**, that you may know how you ought to answer each one.

**3.2.6.3 Their part**

- Must respond to God
- Must respond to us
- Must make the right choices

Their part is to persist in obedience to the Lord.

Philippians 2:12 (WEB)

12. So then, my beloved, even as you have always obeyed, not only in my presence, but now **much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling**.

We are not responsible for the life choices or decisions of other people. That is not “our part”. We need to work hard and be available, but when push comes to shove, we can't “save” anyone. Only God can.

## Part IV

# Expanded process in each stage

# Chapter 4

## Spiritually dead

### 4.1 Share and connect

The thing you should hope and pray to do with an unbeliever is share the gospel. First you connect with them in friendship, reaching out to them. Then, you share your life with them, hoping to get the opportunity to share the gospel. Do this respectfully and relationally.

### 4.2 Recognizing the spiritually dead

- Disbelief in the supernatural, or belief in many forms of the supernatural (multiple deities, interactions with the dead, superstitions, astrology, etc.)
- Disbelief in God (atheism), disbelief in the possibility of God (agnosticism), or belief in a God that is different from the God of Scripture
- Belief in one God but many ways to get to Him
- Anger against Christians or the Church
- Ignorance or confusion about God, Jesus, the Church
- Misinformed about spiritual/biblical truth; spiritual blindness
- Belief that the answers they seek lie in worldly prestige, power, fame, etc.
- Belief that they are as good as anyone else, so they don't need a Savior
- Belief that they have done too much wrong and a fear they can't be saved
- Belief that what is right for you is right for you, and what is right for others is right for them
  - There are no absolutes; right and wrong are relative to the individual

### 4.3 Some things the spiritually dead might say

- "I don't believe there is a God."
- "The Bible is full of myths."
- "I don't believe in miracles."
- "Evolution explains away the need for a God."
- "God is just a crutch."
- "I am not a Christian because Christians are
  - hypocrites."

- responsible for all wars in history."
- and so on.
- "There are many ways to get to God."
- "I don't need to be saved since I am as good as anyone else."
- "A good person gets to go to heaven and a bad person goes to hell."
- "I believe in heaven, but not in hell."
- "I already am a Christian because I go to Church and am a good person."
- "There is no hell because God is a God of love."
- "I have been a good person, so I will be okay."
- "It doesn't matter what you believe as long as you are sincere."
- "There is no absolute right and wrong."
- "I don't know where I am going if I die."
- "I believe in Jesus, but my friend is a Mormon. It doesn't really matter as long as we believe in Jesus, right?"

## 4.4 Needs of the spiritually dead

- A secure relationship with a mature believer
- A picture of the real Jesus lived out in front of them
- Answers and evidences for Christianity, and answers to life's hard questions
- An explanation of the gospel message
- An invitation to receive Christ

### 4.4.1 How do we share the gospel?

Build a rapport with the person. As you discuss things, believe God for an opportunity to talk about the gospel. You can share how God helped you with the kinds of issues the person is going through, for example. When the time is right and you have an open door, you can ask them these questions.

Say you die tonight and you stand before Jesus and He asks you, "Why should I let you into my heaven?"  
How will you answer?

After they answer, ask them if you can share with them what the Bible says in answer to this question. If they agree to that, use the "Long" Romans Road to share with them.

#### 4.4.1.1 Man has a sin problem

Jesus had to die because of the sins of all man. Sin basically means to fall short, to miss the mark, to fall short of what God expects of you. Man is steeped in sin, having a nature which is rebellious and doesn't want to do the right things.

#### 4.4.1.2 Romans Road - path to salvation

Romans 3:23 (WEB)

23. for **all have sinned**, and fall short of the glory of God;

Romans 6:23 (WEB)

23. For **the wages of sin is death**, but **the free gift of God is eternal life** in Christ Jesus our Lord.

Romans 5:8 (WEB)

8. But God commends his own love toward us, in that **while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us**

Romans 10:9-10 (WEB)

9. that if you will **confess with your mouth that Jesus is Lord**, and **believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead**, you will be saved.

10. For **with the heart, one believes resulting in righteousness**; and **with the mouth confession is made resulting in salvation**.

Romans 10:13 (WEB)

13. For, "Whoever will **call on the name of the Lord** will be saved"

Romans 5:1 (WEB)

1. **Being** therefore **justified by faith we have peace with God** through our Lord Jesus Christ;

Romans 8:1 (WEB)

1. There is therefore now **no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus, who don't walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit**.

#### 4.4.1.3 Jesus bore our Sin on the cross

To "sin" means to fall short or miss the mark. Sin has serious consequences. Because of our sins, Jesus died on the cross.

1 Peter 2:24 (WEB)

24. **He himself bore our sins in his body on the tree**, that we, having died to sins, might live to righteousness. You were healed by his wounds.

#### 4.4.1.4 He wants you to believe

Acts 16:31 (WEB)

31. They said, "**Believe** in the Lord Jesus Christ, and **you will be saved**, you and your household."

#### 4.4.1.5 He wants you to receive His gift

Ephesians 2:8-9 (WEB)

8. for **by grace you have been saved** through faith, and that not of yourselves; **it is the gift of God**

9. not of works, that no one would boast.

#### 4.4.1.6 If you receive Him...

Revelation 3:20 (WEB)

20. Behold, I stand at the door and knock. If anyone **hears my voice and opens the door, then I will come in to him, and will dine with him, and he with me**

#### 4.4.1.7 Pray the Sinner's prayer to receive Jesus

*Lord Jesus, I realize I am a sinner and need your forgiveness. I confess with my mouth that You, Jesus, are Lord, the Ruler over all. I believe in my heart that You came to earth as a man and died for my sin. I believe God the Father raised You from the dead and You are alive forevermore, seated on Your throne in heaven next to the Father. I believe Your blood that was shed on the cross washes away all my sin. I ask you to forgive my sins and give me the gift of eternal life. I ask you to send the Holy Spirit to live in me. My life is yours, from this day forth and forever.*

#### 4.4.1.8 God's part and your part

Remember, it is God the Father who draws people to Jesus.

John 5:40 (WEB)

40. Yet **you will not come to me**, that you may have life.

John 6:37 (WEB)

37. All those whom **the Father gives me** will come to me. He who comes to me I will in no way throw out.

John 6:44 (WEB)

44. **No one can come to me unless the Father who sent me draws him**, and I will raise him up in the last day.

You can't make people come to Jesus. You can't force people to serve God. It is the Holy Spirit accomplishing the Father's will who brings people to Jesus. Your part is to watch people and learn to recognize when the Lord is drawing someone. When you see that in the life of another, then reach out and share, and leave the results up to the Lord.

## 4.5 Biblical needs of the spiritually dead

### 4.5.1 Seek the lost

Unbelievers are lost. They need someone to seek them out. They need a shepherd who will leave the 99 sheep to go find the one lost sheep. As a disciple, you are commanded to take up the calling of Jesus to seek and save those who are lost. While we don't have the power to save anyone in ourselves, we have the delegated authority to see people come to Jesus. This is a critical first step in seeing people come to be disciples of Jesus, which is your ultimate goal for everyone who is lost.

Matthew 18:11-14; Luke 15:3-10

*Jesus came to seek the lost, like the shepherd in the parable of 100 sheep.*

*It is not the will of the Father in heaven that one of these little ones should perish.*

Mark 1:35-39; Luke 4:42-44

*Jesus came so he could preach in all the towns of Israel.*

Mark 3:13-19

*Jesus called his disciples and appointed the twelve that He might send them out to preach.*

*Jesus gave his disciples authority to heal sicknesses and to cast out demons.*

Luke 15:3-32

*In the parable of the prodigal son, the father had compassion and took the young man back gladly.*

*In this parable, the brother was jealous at how well the prodigal was treated.*

*The young man who turned back to his father was dead and is alive; he was lost and is found.*

Matthew 10:1-15; Mark 6:7-13; Luke 9:1-6; 10:1-12

*Jesus sent the twelve and the seventy out two by two.*

*Jesus said whatever city (village) they came to to seek out a worthy oikos and stay there.*

*Don't go from house to house, but stay in the worthy oikos.*

*Eat and drink whatever is set before you, preach the gospel and heal the sick.*

*If they don't receive you, shake the dust off your feet on the way out of the village.*

*Heal the sick and tell them God's kingdom has come near to them.*

Romans 1:16-32

*I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ; it is the power of God for salvation to everyone who believes.*

*In the gospel is revealed God's righteousness by faith.*

*The wrath of God is revealed from heaven against those who suppress the truth.*

*Knowing God, they didn't glorify Him, became vain, their heart was darkened and they became fools.*

*God gave them up to a reprobate mind to do what is not fitting.*

*They knew the ordinance of God, that those who did those are worthy of death, but they did them and approved others who did them.*

#### 4.5.1.1 Repent

To repent is to turn, to change your mind. True repentance is not rooted in emotions, although emotions may be evident when someone repents. True repentance is rooted in a commitment to turn away from the sin and turn to God. When God has granted repentance to someone by the Holy Spirit, that person turns from their life of sin and turns to the living God, to obey Him. Repentance is the first step to becoming a disciple.

Matthew 3:1-2; 3:7-12; Luke 3:1-17

*John the Baptist: repent for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand.*

Matthew 4:12-17; Mark 1:14-15

*Jesus: repent for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand.*

*Jesus: repent and believe the Gospel of the Kingdom.*

Matthew 9:9-13; Mark 2:13-17; Luke 5:27-32

*The healthy need no physician, but the sick do; sinners need Jesus; He came to call sinners to repentance.*

Luke 13:1-9

*Jesus taught the people that if they didn't repent, they would perish as other sinners had perished.*

*Parable of the fig tree: the Master came seeking fruit on it, but found none; he said cut it down.*

*The Gardner said give it time; if it produced fruit, fine, but if not, they could cut it down.*

Acts 2:13-39; 3:1-26

*Peter preached, the multitude were pierced to the heart; Peter said repent, be baptized and they would receive the Holy Spirit.*

1 Thessalonians 1:4-10

*The Thessalonians had turned to God from idols, to serve a living and true God.*

*Jesus delivers us from the wrath to come.*

## 4.6 What to do with the spiritually dead

### 4.6.1 Share and connect

- Connect with them in friendship
- Share your testimony
- Earn the right to share Christ
- Pray that God shows you opportunities to serve them
- Pray that God gives you opportunities to share
- Share the gospel

# Chapter 5

## Spiritual infants

### 5.1 Share and connect

- Share your life
- Share new truth
- Share new habits
- Connect with them, meeting their needs, loving them as individuals, comforting them

### 5.2 Recognizing spiritual infants

- Ignorance about what they need spiritually and what the Bible says about life and the purpose of a disciple
- Ignorance about or frustration toward Christianity and the Church
- Belief that disciples make no mistakes; unrealistic expectations of themselves and others
- Belief that they are defined as the culture would define them
- A worldly perspective about life with some spiritual truth mixed in
- Mixing Christianity with some other religions but not realizing it

### 5.3 Some things spiritual infants might say

- "I believe in Jesus, but my church is when I am in the woods."
- "I don't have to go to church to be a Christian."
- "I gave my life to Jesus and I go to church, but I don't need to be close to others."
- "I don't have time to be in relationship with another Christian."
- "My spouse is my accountability partner; I don't need anyone else."
- "I pray and read the Bible; that is good enough for me."
- "My ministry is my secular work; I don't have time for the church."
- "I don't believe the Bible said that."
- "We were born as spirit children in heaven before we were born down here as humans, right?"



## 5.4 Needs of spiritual infants

- Individual attention from a spiritual parent
- Protection and care
- To have the Word of God explained to them
- To have the habits of a believer explained and modeled to them

### 5.4.1 Biblical needs of spiritual infants

The following are doctrinal basics needed to be mastered by spiritual babies on their journey to becoming spiritual children.

#### 5.4.1.1 Disciples follow Jesus

Spiritual babies need to learn how to live as disciples of Christ. From the outset of their spiritual journey, older disciples need to teach babies that they are disciples, and they are called to make disciples.

Matthew 8:19-23; Luke 9:57-62; Luke 9:61-62

*Jesus corrected those who weren't sincere about following Him.*

*No one who puts his hand to the plow and looks back is fit for God's Kingdom.*

*When he got into a boat, the disciples of Jesus followed Him.*

Matthew 19:16-30; Mark 10:17-31; Luke 18:18-30

*Jesus told a youth to sell everything and give to the poor and he would have treasure in heaven, then follow Him.*

*Jesus said a rich man would only enter into heaven with difficulty.*

*The disciples left all to follow Him.*

*Those who left houses, family and lands for His sake would receive a hundred times and inherit eternal life.*

*Many will be last who are now first, and first who are now last.*

Luke 10:38-42

*Mary sat at the feet of Jesus and heard His word.*

*Martha was anxiously working but Mary chose the good part, and it would not be taken away from her.*

John 6:67-71

*Jesus asked His disciples if they wanted to leave Him, but Peter said they could go to no one else.*

*Jesus has the words of life and the disciples of Jesus believe He is the Christ, the Son of the living God.*

Acts 9:1-9

*Jesus corrected Saul for persecuting Him; Saul persecuted the followers of Jesus.*

2 Corinthians 5:11-21

*Knowing the fear of the Lord, Paul and his team persuaded men.*

*Paul and his team did not commend themselves as those who boast in appearance and not in heart; the love of Christ constrained them.*

*One died for all, therefore all died; we should no longer live to ourselves, but to Him who for our sakes died and rose again.*

*If anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation; the old things have passed away, and all things have become new.*

*God gave Paul and his team the ministry of reconciliation; they were ambassadors for Christ.*

*He who knew no sin was made to be sin on our behalf, that in Him we might become the righteousness of God.*

**5.4.1.2 Lay a solid foundation**

Spiritual babies need a solid foundation in their lives. If they are going to go from being babies to taking in solid food — who by use have their senses exercised to discern good and evil - they will need to master the foundational truths of the Christian faith.<sup>1</sup>

Matthew 16:13-20; Mark 8:27-30; Luke 9:18-26

*Peter told Jesus He was the Christ, the Son of God; flesh and blood did not reveal this, but the Father in heaven.*

*He was Peter (petros, little stone) and on this rock (petra, bedrock) Jesus built His Church.*

*This revelation of the identity of Jesus is the foundation of His Church (assembly).*

*The gates of Hell will not prevail against His Church (assembly).*

*Jesus gave us the keys to the Kingdom of Heaven.*

*Whatever we bind on earth will have been bound in heaven.*

*Whatever we release (loose) on earth shall have been released (loosed) in heaven.*

John 3:1-21

*Nicodemus came to Jesus at night, and Jesus revealed to him who He was.*

*Jesus said a man must be born again or he will not see God's Kingdom.*

*A man must be born of water and of the Spirit or he will not see God's Kingdom.*

*What is born of flesh is flesh, what is born of the Spirit is spirit.*

*God so loved the world that He gave His only Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have eternal life.*

*God didn't send His son to judge the world, but that the world should be saved through Him.*

*Light came into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, for their works were evil.*

*He who does evil hates light, and doesn't come to it, lest their works be exposed.*

*He who does the truth comes to the light, that his works may be revealed to have been done in God.*

Acts 2:40-47

*Peter preached repentance on the day of Pentecost and 3000 people were saved.*

*The disciples continued in the apostle's teaching and fellowship, in the breaking of bread and in prayer.*

*The Lord added to the Church (assembly) day by day those who were being saved.*

1 Corinthians 3:1-15

*The Corinthians were fleshly, like babes, and not spiritual; they had to be fed milk and couldn't take solid food.*

*Neither he who plants nor he who waters is important, but God who gives the increase.*

*Paul laid a foundation in the Corinthians, Jesus Himself, and expected them to build on that and grow.*

*No one can lay any other foundation than Jesus.*

2 Corinthians 7:1-16

*Cleanse yourself from all defilement of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.*

*Godly sorrow produces repentance to salvation, with no regret.*

*The sorrow of the world produces death.*

2 Timothy 2:19

---

<sup>1</sup>See the Foundations of Faith bible study series produced by the Great Commission Cell Church. <http://www.greatcommissioncellchurch.org/FoundationsOfFaith.pdf>

*God's firm foundation stands on two things: God knows those who are His, and everyone who names the name of the Lord should depart from unrighteousness.*

Hebrews 5:11-14; Hebrews 6:1-8

*The believers spoken to in Hebrews should be teachers, but they need milk, not solid food.*

*They needed to have someone teach them the rudiments of the first principles of the revelations of God.*

*Everyone who lives on milk is not experienced in the word of righteousness.*

*Solid food is for the adult who by use have their senses exercised to discern good and evil.*

*The writer of Hebrews wanted to leave teaching foundations and go on to perfection.*

*Christian foundation: (1) repentance from dead works, (2) faith toward God, (3) the teaching of baptisms, (4) laying on of hands, (5) resurrection of the dead and (6) eternal judgment.*

*Land which receives the rain and produces fruit is blessed.*

*Land that only produces thorns and thistles is rejected, near being cursed; its end is to be burned.*

#### 5.4.1.3 Walk in growth

God wants us to grow in all the right ways, in love, grace, and blamelessness. God wants us to diminish in all the wrong ways, like loving self, loving pleasure, being impure. His will for us is to grow up until we are reproducing adults in the Kingdom of God.

1 Thessalonians 1:2-4

*Paul encouraged the Thessalonians because their faith and love of each other grew.*

1 Peter 2:1-4

*Peter said to put away all wickedness, deceit, hypocrisy, envy, and evil speaking, and like babies long for the pure milk of the word that by it you may grow.*

*Taste that the Lord is gracious; come to him as a living stone, rejected by men but chosen by God and precious.*

1 John 2:12-14

*John wrote to little children — their sins are forgiven and they know the Father.*

*John wrote to young men and women — they have overcome the evil one, they are strong, and the word of God remains in them.*

*John wrote to fathers and mothers — they know Him who is from the beginning.*

#### 5.4.1.4 Walk in the traditions

The traditions were doctrinal truths presented by Paul and his team to new believers. These truths were organized and communicated so that young believers could master them and learn to walk in them in a short amount of time. God wants us to walk in the traditions taught in the New Testament.<sup>2</sup>

1 Corinthians 11:1-2

*Be imitators of godly men, even as they are of Christ.*

*Hold firm the traditions, even as they are delivered to you.*

2 Thessalonians 2:13-17

*God chose you from the beginning for salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief in the truth.*

*Stand firm and hold the traditions which you were taught, whether by word or by letter (Scripture).*

*Jesus will comfort your heart and establish you in every good work and word.*

<sup>2</sup>See the Traditions of the Early Church produced by the Great Commission Cell Church. <http://www.greatcommissioncellchurch.org/TraditionsOfTheEarlyChurch.pdf> and <http://www.greatcommissioncellchurch.org/Traditions-short.pdf>

2 Thessalonians 3:6-15

*Withdraw yourself from every brother who walks in rebellion and not after the tradition which you received.*

*Paul told the churches to imitate him and his team, who made a good example for them.*

*They weren't rebellious, nor did they eat without paying; they labored night and day to be an example.*

*If anyone is not willing to work, don't let him eat.*

*Some walk in rebellion, don't work at all and are busybodies.*

*Those who are that way should work with quietness and eat their own bread.*

*Don't be weary in doing what is right.*

*If any man doesn't obey the word, note that man and have no company with him so he might be ashamed.*

*Don't count him as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother.*

#### 5.4.1.5 Walk in humility

A real need of spiritual babies is correction. Have you ever heard of the “terrible twos”? In the same way, spiritual babies have holes in their knowledge and understanding of the Bible and being a disciple, and they need consistent and loving correction. A prerequisite for this is the commitment to embrace correction and allow it to have its full effect.

Romans 12:14-21

*Bless those who persecute you; bless and don't curse.*

*Rejoice with those who rejoice, weep with those who weep; be of the same mind toward one another.*

*Don't set your mind on high things, but associate with the humble; don't be wise in your own conceits.*

*Repay no one evil for evil; respect what is honorable; be at peace with all as much as it lies with you.*

*Do not be overcome with evil, but overcome evil with good.*

1 Corinthians 4:1-13

*Do not think beyond the things which are written, so none is puffed up against one another.*

*God makes you different, and what you have you received from Him, so don't boast as if you had not received it.*

1 Peter 3:8-22

*Be like minded, compassionate, loving as brothers, tenderhearted.*

*Bless that you might inherit a blessing; keep your tongue from evil and your lips from speaking deceit.*

*Turn away from evil and do good; seek peace and pursue it.*

*The eyes of the Lord are on the righteous, His ears open to their prayers, but His face is against those who do evil.*

*Sanctify the Lord God in your heart, always ready to give an answer to everyone who asks you a reason concerning the hope that is in you, with humility and fear, having a good conscience.*

## 5.5 What to do with spiritual infants

- Teach them the foundations of the Christian faith
- Teach them about the spiritual battle that surrounds them
- Teach them how spiritual transformation works in our lives
- Teach them about the stages of spiritual growth and the discipleship process
- Teach them what new habits they need to develop

- Teach them Christians...
  - Need a personal Bible study plan or method
  - Meet together and are part of the Church (assembly)
  - Serve others Give to others
  - Are in relationships
  - Are humble Share their faith with all who will listen

# Chapter 6

## Spiritual Child

### 6.1 Connect, minister, disciple

- Connect to God
- Connect to Family (core group, cell)
- Connect to purpose
- Help them recognize their spiritual gifts so they can serve
- Teach them to walk as disciples of Jesus

### 6.2 Recognizing a spiritual child

- Excitement over having deep relationships, which they may not have had before
- Remembering who they were as unbelievers and appreciation of how God changed them
- Understanding much of the Christian language
- Disillusionment because of their high expectations of others
- Belief that feelings are most important, which leads to spiritual highs and lows
- Lack of wisdom about how to use what they are learning, i.e., too aggressive in sharing their faith, too legalistic in their approach to family and friends, etc.
- Belief that people are not caring for them enough
- Mimicking mature Christians' behaviors in order to look good or gain praise — do the right things for the wrong reasons
- Serving others in a ministry as long as the benefit outweighs the cost — service is conditional
- Enthusiasm about new teachings
- Confusion and being black-and-white on complex issues because they have an incomplete view of biblical subjects
- They believe things about life and faith that are Biblically inaccurate
- Knowing more about what Christians say than about what the Word says

### 6.3 Representative phrases from a spiritual child

- "I love my small group; don't add any more people to it."
- "Who are all these people coming to my church? Tell them to go somewhere else."
- "I am not coming to church anymore. It has become too big, and it has too many people."
- "My small group is not taking care of my needs."
- "I don't have anyone who is spending enough time with me; no one is discipling me."
- "I didn't like the music today. I think they need to..."
- "I am not being fed much in my church, so I am going to another one that meets my needs better."

### 6.4 Needs of spiritual children

- Teach about being part of a spiritual family
- Teach about feeding themselves
- Teach about who they are in Christ
- Teach about having relationship with Christ
- Teach about having relationship with other believers
- Teach about appropriate expectations concerning other believers
- Teach about spiritual gifts and what part the Lord has prepared them to play in the Body of Christ
- Teach about timing - i.e., leadership skills doesn't mean they are ready to lead

#### 6.4.1 Biblical needs of spiritual children

As a spiritual child, you must understand who Jesus is and submit your life to Him. He is God, he is your source of life, and He is your High Priest, praying for you before the throne of the Father. He will return to take all true believers home to be with Him.

##### 6.4.1.1 Jesus is Lord

Matthew 3:16

*The Holy Spirit descended on Jesus in the form of a dove.*

Luke 4:16-22

*Jesus was anointed by the Spirit to preach, heal, release, recover, deliver and proclaim.*

John 16:7-15

*It was better Jesus went away so the Spirit could be sent to us.*

*The Spirit will guide us into all truth.*

*The Spirit will declare to us things that are coming.*

*The Spirit glorifies Jesus, taking what is from Him and declaring it to us.*

**6.4.1.2 Jesus is Creator God**

John 1:1-14

*Jesus, the Word, was the Creator; in the beginning, He was with God and was God.*

*Jesus became flesh and dwelt among us.*

*In Jesus was life, and the life was the light of men.*

*As many as received Him, he gave the right to be sons of God, born not of blood but of God.*

John 1:15

*Jesus came after John the Baptist, but existed before him.*

John 1:16-18

*Jesus was full of grace and truth, and from His fullness we received grace upon grace.*

*Grace and truth are realized in Jesus.*

John 8:48-59

*Jesus said, "Before Abraham came into existence, I AM."*

Colossians 1:15-20

*Jesus is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of all creation.*

*By Jesus and for Jesus all things were created.*

*Jesus was before all things, and all things are held together by Him.*

*In Jesus, the fullness of the deity dwells; He is head of all principality and power.*

*Through Jesus, God the Father reconciled all things to Himself.*

Colossians 2:8-10

*All the fullness of God dwells in Jesus.*

1 Timothy 3:14-16

*Jesus was revealed in the flesh, justified in the spirit, seen by angels, preached among the nations, believed on in the world, and received up in glory.*

1 John 1:1-4

*Jesus was from the beginning.*

**6.4.1.3 Jesus is the Son of God**

Matthew 3:17; Mark 1:11; Luke 3:22

*Jesus is the Father's beloved son, in whom He is well pleased.*

Matthew 11:25-27

*All things were delivered to Jesus by the Father.*

Romans 1:1-4

*Jesus, born the offspring of David, was declared the Son of God with power by the resurrection.*

Hebrews 1:1-14



*Jesus upholds all things by the word of His power.*

*Jesus laid the foundation of the earth, and the heavens are the work of His hands.*

*Jesus is God's Son, heir of all things, through whom God made the worlds.*

Hebrews 3:1-11

*He who built all things is God.*

Revelations 1:1-20

*He is coming in the clouds; every eye will see Him.*

*Jesus is the radiance of the Father's glory, the image of His substance.*

*Jesus is the Alpha and the Omega, He who was and is and is to come, the Almighty.*

#### **6.4.1.4 Jesus is the Son of Man**

Matthew 1:1-17; Luke 3:23-38

*Jesus is the Son of Man, born the descendant of David.*

#### **6.4.1.5 He was born the King of the Jews**

Matthew 2:2

*The wise men sought He who was born King of the Jews.*

John 12:12-18

*Jesus rode into Jerusalem on a donkey, fulfilling Scripture.*

*"Hosanna, blessed is Jesus who comes in the name of the Lord, the King of Israel."*

#### **6.4.1.6 Jesus will return**

Luke 24:50-53; Acts 1:9-11

*Jesus will return even as He left the earth.*

Matthew 24:32-35

*In the parable of the fig tree, we know when the time is soon when we see the signs.*

Matthew 24:36-51

*No one but the Father knows the day and hour of His return.*

*Jesus told us to watch and be ready.*

#### **6.4.1.7 Jesus is our High Priest**

Hebrews 2:5-18

*All things were put in subjection under His feet.*

*By grace Jesus tasted death for everyone.*

*Through death He brought to nothing him who had the power of death.*

*Jesus makes atonement for us and can help those who are tempted as He was tempted.*

Hebrews 5:1-10

*Jesus is a High Priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek.*

*Jesus learned obedience by the things that He suffered.*

Hebrews 7:1-28

*Jesus is a high priest, not after the law of fleshly commandments, but after the power of an endless life.  
Jesus is the collateral of a better covenant.*

Hebrews 8:1-6

*Jesus is our High Priest who sat down on the right hand of the throne of Majesty in Heaven.*

Hebrews 9:1-28

*Through His own blood, He entered once for all into the Holy Place having obtained eternal redemption.  
Jesus dedicated the new covenant with His own blood.*

*Christ was offered once to bear sins and will appear again without sin to those who wait for Him for salvation.*

#### **6.4.1.8 Jesus the Good Shepherd**

Matthew 2:6

*Out of Judah came a governor who would shepherd Israel.*

John 10:1-42

*The sheep listen to His voice.*

*The Shepherd enters by the door, the thief climbs up some other way.*

*Jesus is the Good Shepherd who lays down His life for the sheep.*

*The thief comes to kill, steal and destroy; Jesus came that we might have life abundantly.*

*His sheep hear His voice; He knows them and they follow Him.*

*Jesus and the Father are one; His sheep will never perish, and no one will snatch them out of His hand.*

John 17:10-13

*He gives His sheep eternal life and keeps them in the name of the Father.*

#### **6.4.1.9 Salvation is by grace through faith**

Spiritual children need to learn to walk in grace. Grace is not just the kindness of God that forgives us, but it is the empowering of God that produces the fruit of the Spirit in our lives. Spiritual children need to understand how grace works and how to live the life of an overcoming disciple through grace.

Romans 1:5-7

*Paul received grace and apostleship for obedience of faith among the nations.*

Romans 11:1-36

*There are a remnant of Jews according to grace, and hence no longer of works.*

*What the Jews sought they did not obtain, except the chosen ones; the rest were hardened.*

*God was severe toward those who fell, but toward the chosen He was good.*

*The gifts and callings of God are irrevocable; He will save Israel.*

*God bound all to disobedience so He might have mercy on all.*

1 Corinthians 1:1-9

*We are sanctified in Jesus, called to be saints with all who call on the name of Jesus.  
The grace of God was given to us in Jesus.  
In everything we are enriched in Jesus, that we come behind in no spiritual gift.  
God is faithful, and through Him we are called into fellowship with His Son, Jesus.*

Ephesians 1:1-14

*The Father has blessed us with every spiritual blessing in Jesus.  
The Father chose us to be holy and without defect before Him in love.  
The Father adopted us as children through Jesus, by the good pleasure of His desire.  
By the glory of the Father's grace, He freely gave us favor in the beloved.  
We have our redemption by His blood, the forgiveness of our trespasses, by the Father's grace.  
The Father made His grace abound toward us in all wisdom and prudence.  
In Jesus we were assigned an inheritance.  
In Him we believed and were sealed with the promised Spirit, who is the pledge of our inheritance.*

Ephesians 2:1-22

*We were made alive when we were dead in transgressions and sins.  
Satan is the spirit who works in the children of disobedience, the children of wrath.  
But God, rich in mercy, made us alive with Christ; by grace we have been saved.  
God made us to sit with Him in heavenly places so by grace He could show His kindness toward us.  
By grace we have been saved through faith, not of ourselves; it is the gift of God.  
We were separate from Christ, but now He has made us near in the blood of Jesus.  
Jesus came and preached peace; through Him we have our access in one Spirit to the Father.  
We are the household of God, built on the foundation of apostles and prophets, Jesus being the cornerstone.  
We are fitted together, growing into a holy temple in the Lord, a habitation of God in the Spirit.*

Titus 2:11-15

*The grace of God appeared, bringing salvation to men, instructing us to deny ungodliness and worldly  
lusts.  
Jesus gave Himself for us, to redeem us from all iniquity and purify a people for His possession, zealous  
for good works.*

Hebrews 12:14-29

*Follow after peace and sanctification, without which no man will see the Lord.  
Let's have grace, through which we serve God acceptably with reverence and awe, for our God is a con-  
suming fire.*

1 Thessalonians 4:13-18

*Jesus died and rose again; in the same way, we will be caught up in the air to be with the Lord forever.*

Colossians 1:3-8

*We have heard and know the grace of God in truth.*

Colossians 2:1-7

*God wants us knit together in love, gaining all riches of the full assurance of understanding.  
All treasures of wisdom and knowledge are hidden in the Father and Jesus.  
As we received the Lord Jesus, we should walk in Him, rooted and built up in Him, established in faith,  
even as we were taught.*

Colossians 2:16-23

*Let no one judge you in eating, drinking, or with respect to a holiday.*

*Hold firmly to the Head, from whom all the body being supplied and knit together through the joints and ligaments, grows with God's growth.*

*We died with Christ from the elements of the world; do not subject yourself to ordinances about things which perish with use.*

*These appear wise in self-imposed worship, humility and severity to the body, but have no value against the indulgence of the flesh.*

Hebrews 4:14-16

*Since you have such a High Priest, Jesus, hold tightly to your confession.*

*Draw near with boldness to the throne of grace and receive mercy and find grace for help in time of need.*

1 John 2:18-29

*We have an anointing from the Holy One, and we have all knowledge.*

*Jesus promised us eternal life.*

*Remain in Him so when He appears, we may have boldness and not be ashamed before Him at His coming.*

*Everyone who practices righteousness has been born of Him.*

#### 6.4.1.10 Jesus saves from sin

Jesus didn't just save us from the *consequences* of sin, but He saved us from *being slaves to sin*. Spiritual children need to learn to walk in this truth, overcoming sin in their lives.

Romans 6:1-23

*We died to sin, being baptized into the death of Jesus and raised in newness of life; we should live in sin no longer.*

*If we are united with Him in the likeness of His death, we will be part of His resurrection.*

*Our old man was crucified with Him that the body of sin might be done away with, that we would no longer be in bondage to sin.*

*He who has died has been freed from sin; if we died with Christ, we will live with Him, as He dies no more.*

*The death Jesus died, He died to sin one time, but the life He lives, He lives to God.*

*Consider yourself to be dead to sin but alive to God in Jesus.*

*Do not let sin reign in your mortal bodies nor present your members to sin as instruments of unrighteousness.*

*Sin will not have dominion over you, for you are not under law, but under grace.*

*Being made free from sin and having become servants of God, you have your fruit of sanctification and the result of eternal life.*

*The wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.*

Romans 7:1-25

*We were made dead to the law so we could be joined to Christ, who was raised from the dead.*

*The Father joined us to Christ so we could produce fruit to God.*

*In the flesh, sinful passions through the law worked in our members to produce death.*

*Now we serve in newness of the spirit, not oldness of the letter.*

*The law is holy and spiritual, but I am fleshly, sold under sin.*

*I don't do what I desire to do, but what I hate I do.*

*In my flesh dwells no good thing.*

*The law of my members wars against the law in my mind and brings me into captivity to sin.*

*Thank God, Jesus Christ our Lord will deliver me from this body of death.*

Romans 8:1-39

*There is no condemnation for those who are in Christ, who don't walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit.*

*The law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus made me free from the law of sin and death.*

*He condemned sin in the flesh, that the ordinance of the law might be fulfilled in us, who do not walk after the flesh but after the Spirit.*

*Those who live according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.*

*The mind of the flesh is death, being hostile to God; the mind of the Spirit is life and peace.*

*Those who are in the flesh cannot please God; if the Spirit dwells in you, you are not in the flesh but in the Spirit.*

*If Christ is in you, the body is dead because of sin, but the spirit is alive because of righteousness.*

*If the Spirit of Him who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, He will give life to your mortal bodies through His Spirit.*

*As many who are led by the Spirit of God are children of God; the Spirit testifies that we are children of God and heirs.*

*The Spirit helps our weaknesses, for we don't know how to pray; He Himself makes intercession for us with groaning which can't be uttered.*

*All things work together for good for those who love God and are called according to His purpose.*

*If God is for us, who can be against us? Nothing will separate us from the love of Christ.*

Galatians 1:1-5

*Jesus gave Himself for our sin, that He might deliver us out of this present evil age.*

Ephesians 4:17-32

*We should no longer walk as the rest of the world walks; we didn't learn Christ that way.*

*They become callous and give themselves up to lust to work all uncleanness with greediness.*

*We should put away our former manner of life, be renewed in the spirit of our minds, and put on the new man, created in righteousness and holiness of truth.*

*Don't grieve the Holy Spirit, but put off bitterness, wrath, anger, outcry, slander, and malice.*

*Be kind to one another, tender hearted, forgiving each other, as God in Christ forgave you.*

Colossians 1:21-23

*In times past we were alienated and enemies in our minds in evil deeds.*

*He reconciled us in the body of His flesh through death, to present us holy, without defect, and blameless before Him.*

*We need to continue in faith, grounded and steadfast, not moved away from the hope of the gospel.*

Colossians 2:11-15

*In Jesus we were circumcised with a circumcision not made with hands, in the putting off of the body of sins of the flesh.*

*We were dead through trespasses; He made us alive with Him having forgiven our trespasses.*

*He nailed the handwriting of ordinances against us to the cross.*

*He stripped principalities and powers, making a show of them openly, triumphing over them.*

Colossians 3:5-17

*Put to death your members: fornication, uncleanness, depraved passion, evil desire, and covetousness, which is idolatry.*

*Because of evil behavior, the wrath of God comes on the children of disobedience.*

*Put off the old man and put on the new, who is renewed in the image of Jesus.*

*Above all virtues, walk in love, which is the bond of perfection.*

1 Thessalonians 5:23-24

*May God Himself sanctify you completely.*

*May your whole spirit, soul and body be completely blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus.*

Titus 3:3-8

*We once were foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving various lusts and pleasures.*

*He saved us through the washing of regeneration and renewing by the Holy Spirit, whom He poured on us richly.*

1 Peter 1:1-25

*The Father caused us to be born again to a living hope.*

*Prepare your minds for action; be sober, set your hope on the grace to be brought to you at the revelation of Jesus.*

*As children of obedience, just as He who called you is holy, you yourselves also be holy in all your behavior.*

*You were redeemed, not with corruptible things, but with the precious blood of Jesus.*

*We were born again, not of corruptible seed but incorruptible, through the word of God.*

1 John 2:1-6

*Do not sin; if anyone sins we have a Counselor with the Father, Jesus the righteous.*

*He is the atoning sacrifice for our sins and for the sins of the whole world.*

*Anyone who claims to be in Him ought to walk as He walked.*

*This is how we know Him, if we keep His commandments.*

*God's love has been perfected in whoever keeps His word.*

1 John 3:1-10

*When He is revealed, we will be like Him, for we will see Him as He is.*

*Everyone who hopes to see Jesus purifies himself even as He is pure.*

*He was revealed to take away our sins, and no sin is in Him; whoever remains in Him doesn't sin.*

*Whoever sins hasn't seen Him and doesn't know Him.*

*He who does righteousness is righteous, even as He is righteous.*

*He who sins is of the devil, for the devil has been sinning from the beginning.*

*For this the Son of God was revealed, that he might destroy the works of the devil.*

*Whoever is born of God doesn't commit sin, because His seed remains in him.*

*Whoever doesn't do righteousness is not of God, neither is he who doesn't love his brother.*

1 John 5:1-21

*Whoever is born of God overcomes the world; this victory is our faith.*

*God gave us eternal life, and this life is in His Son; he who has the Son has life.*

*If we ask anything according to His will, He listens to us, and we know we have what we asked of Him.*

*Whoever is born of God doesn't sin, but keeps himself and the evil one doesn't touch him.*

**6.4.1.11 Submit to those who serve**

Spiritual children need to submit to servant-leaders who are mentoring them in living the life of the disciple. As a spiritual child, you need someone to correct you. Correction is the way of life. The only correct biblical response to someone who corrects you is to submit to their correction. As you do so, you will learn to be wise.

1Corinthians 16:10-12

*Paul told the Corinthians to support Timothy as he did the work of the Lord.*

1 Corinthians 16:15-18

*The household of Stephanas, the first fruits of Achaia, set themselves to serve the saints.*

*The household of Stephanas refreshed the spirits of those they served.*

*Acknowledge and submit to people such as the household of Stephanas.*

2 Corinthians 8:16-24

*Titus served the churches, and Paul told the Church to show the proof of their love to him.*

1 Thessalonians 5:12-13

*Respect and honor those who labor among you for their work's sake.*

1 Peter 5:5-7

*Young people should be subject to the older ones.*

*Clothe yourselves with humility and submit to one another.*

*God resists the proud but gives grace to the humble.*

*Humble yourself under God's hand, that He may exalt you in due time, casting all your worries on Him, because He cares for you.*

**6.4.1.12 Disciples obey the Lord**

Obedience to the Lord is a sure sign that you are a disciple. Just as a wedding ring identifies you as a married person, obedience to Jesus identifies you as a disciple. Your goal in life is to be like Him, to imitate Him, to live and walk as He did. If a person says he or she is a follower of Jesus, but that person does not obey the Bible, that person is a liar. I didn't say that. Jesus did. As spiritual children, you will learn how to obey Jesus.

Matthew 1:18-19; 1:24-25; 2:14-15; 2:19-23

*Joseph, the husband of Mary, received direction from the Lord in dreams and obeyed.*

Matthew 3:13-15

*Jesus went to be baptized of John the Baptist; John resisted, but Jesus commanded it, and John obeyed.*

Matthew 4:18-22

*Jesus called Peter, Andrew, James and John while they worked with their fathers; they left their nets and followed Him immediately.*

Matthew 5:13-16

*We are the salt of the world; if we lose our saltiness, we are good for nothing but to be thrown away.*

*We are the light of the world; a light should be put out where it gives light to everyone.*

*Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father.*

Matthew 7:21-27; Luke 6:46-49

*Not everyone who calls Jesus Lord will enter Heaven, but he who does the will of the Father.*

*Many will say they worked miracles in His name, but He will tell them to depart, workers of iniquity; He never knew them.*

*The man who comes to Jesus, hears His words and does them is wise, building his house on a rock.*

*The man who comes to Jesus, hears His words and does not do them is foolish, building his house on sand.*

Matthew 11:7-24; Luke 7:24-35

*John the Baptist is the greatest of those born of women, but a person in the kingdom is greater than he. Wisdom is justified of her children.*

Matthew 21:1-7

*Jesus told two disciples to retrieve a donkey and her colt; they obeyed and He entered Jerusalem triumphantly, fulfilling Scripture.*

Luke 5:4-11

*Simon obeyed Jesus and caught a great multitude of fish; he was terrified, but Jesus said to follow Him and he would catch men.*

Luke 11:27-32

*Those who hear God's word and do it are blessed.*

Acts 9:10-18

*The Lord told Ananias to pray for Saul and tell him he was a chosen vessel; he didn't want to, but he obeyed.*

1 Corinthians 10:1-13

*Moses and the children were baptized in the sea and cloud, but God was not pleased with their disobedience; they were examples to us.*

*Let him who thinks he stands be careful lest he fall.*

*God will not allow you to be tempted above what you are able, but will with the temptation also make the way of escape, that you may endure it.*

2 Corinthians 2:9

*Paul wanted to know the proof of the Corinthians, whether they were obedient in all things.*

Ephesians 5:3-7

*Do not let fornication, uncleanness, covetousness, filthiness, foolish talking or jesting be mentioned among you.*

*No fornicator, unclean or covetous person has any inheritance in God's Kingdom.*

*Because of these things, the wrath of God comes on the children of disobedience.*

Philippians 2:12-18

*Continue to obey as you always do, working out your salvation with fear and trembling.*

*God works in you to will and work for His good pleasure.*

*Be blameless and harmless, children of God without defect in a perverse generation, among whom you are lights in the world, holding up the word of life.*

Titus 3:1-2



*Be in subjection to (secular) rulers and authorities; be obedient, showing all humility to all men.  
Be obedient and ready for every good work, speak evil of no one, and do not be contentious.*

Philemon 1:1-25

*Paul was confident that Philemon would obey him in his request.*

Hebrews 2:1-4

*Pay attention to what you heard; do not neglect such a great salvation.  
Our salvation was confirmed with signs and wonders, works of power and gifts of the Holy Spirit, according to His will.*

Hebrews 6:9-12

*God is not unrighteous to forget your work and the labor you did in serving the saints.  
Imitate those who through faith and patience inherit the promises.*

James 1:9-27

*Putting away filthiness and wickedness, receive with humility the implanted word, which is able to save your souls.  
Be doers of the word and not just hearers.*

1 Peter 4:12-19

*Judgment begins in the household of God.  
You who suffer according to the will of God, entrust your souls to Him as a faithful Creator.*

#### **6.4.1.13 Disciples follow Jesus**

Disciples are people who follow Jesus. Real disciples do not make lip service to a religious body, but they follow Jesus. They leave their own lives behind, press after Him and they do what He does.

Matthew 8:19-23; Luke 9:57-62; Luke 9:61-62

*Jesus corrected those who weren't sincere about following Him.  
No one who puts his hand to the plow and looks back is fit for God's Kingdom.  
When he got into a boat, the disciples of Jesus followed Him.*

Matthew 19:16-30; Mark 10:17-31; Luke 18:18-30

*Jesus told a youth to sell everything and give to the poor and he would have treasure in heaven, then follow Him.  
Jesus said a rich man would only enter into heaven with difficulty.  
The disciples left all to follow Him.  
Those who left houses, family and lands for His sake would receive a hundred times and inherit eternal life.  
Many will be last who are now first, and first who are now last.*

Luke 10:38-42

*Mary sat at the feet of Jesus and heard His word.  
Martha was anxiously working but Mary chose the good part, and it would not be taken away from her.*

John 6:67-71

*Jesus asked His disciples if they wanted to leave Him, but Peter said they could go to no one else.  
Jesus has the words of life and the disciples of Jesus believe He is the Christ, the Son of the living God.*

Acts 9:1-9

*Jesus corrected Saul for persecuting Him; Saul persecuted the followers of Jesus.*

2 Corinthians 5:11-21

*Knowing the fear of the Lord, Paul and his team persuaded men.*

*Paul and his team did not commend themselves as those who boast in appearance and not in heart; the love of Christ constrained them.*

*One died for all, therefore all died; we should no longer live to ourselves, but to Him who for our sakes died and rose again.*

*If anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation; the old things have passed away, and all things have become new.*

*God gave Paul and his team the ministry of reconciliation; they were ambassadors for Christ.*

*He who knew no sin was made to be sin on our behalf, that in Him we might become the righteousness of God.*

#### **6.4.1.14 Disciples lose their lives for Jesus**

Jesus said we should count the cost of being a disciple. As a disciple, you should do this early in your walk. Spiritual children, unlike physical children, need to decide to follow Jesus, no matter how much it costs them. Jesus doesn't accept excuses, nor does He lift the requirements for special reasons. We are all called to follow Him, and doing so will cost us everything, maybe even our lives.

Matthew 16:21-28; 17:22-23; Mark 8:31-38

*Anyone who desires to come after Jesus should deny themselves, take up their cross and follow Him.*

*Whoever desires to save their lives will lose it, but whoever loses their life for His sake will find it.*

Luke 14:25-35

*Anyone who doesn't disregard his own family and his own life can't be the disciple of Jesus.*

*Whoever doesn't bear his own cross and come after Him can't be His disciple.*

*As Christians, we need to count the cost of serving Jesus.*

*Whoever doesn't renounce all he has can't be His disciple.*

*Salt is good, but if it has become flat and tasteless, it is thrown out.*

#### **6.4.1.15 Walk in moral excellence**

As disciples, there are certain acts of the flesh which shouldn't even be mentioned among us. You need to walk in moral excellence, turning from the acts of the carnal nature and pursuing Jesus. No other lifestyle is acceptable. God does not wink at immorality. Practicing certain types of immoral behavior will separate you from Jesus forever.

Galatians 6:11-18

*Often people compel legal requirements to make a good impression and not be persecuted for the cross.*

*Often people who make legal requirements want to boast in the flesh.*

*Don't boast except in the cross, through which the world is crucified to you and you to the world.*

*In Christ legal requirements are nothing; a new creation is important.*

*Those who walk by the new creation rule will have peace and mercy on them.*

Philippians 4:8-9

*Whatever things are true, honorable, just, pure, lovely, of good report, virtuous and praiseworthy, think on these things.*

*The things which they learned, received, heard and saw in him, do those things.*

1 Thessalonians 5:1-11

*You are children of light, children of the day; you don't belong to night or darkness.*

*Do not sleep, as the rest do, but watch and be sober, since you belong to the day.*

*God didn't appoint you to wrath, but to obtain salvation through Jesus.*

2 Peter 1:3-15

*God's divine power has granted us all things pertaining to life and godliness.*

*God granted to us precious promises that we might become partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world by lust.*

*Add all diligence, and in faith, supply moral excellence.*

*In moral excellence, supply knowledge.*

*In knowledge, supply self-control.*

*In self-control, supply perseverance.*

*In perseverance, supply godliness.*

*In godliness, supply brotherly affection.*

*In brotherly affection, supply love.*

*He who lacks these things is blind, having forgotten the cleansing from his old sins.*

*Be diligent to make your calling and election sure; if you do these things, you will never stumble.*

2 Peter 3:14-18

*Be diligent to be found in peace, without defect and blameless in His sight.*

*Beware lest you be carried away with the error of the wicked and fall from your own steadfastness.*

*Grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior.*

1 John 1:5-10

*God is light, and in Him is no darkness at all.*

*If we say that we have fellowship with Him and walk in the darkness, we lie and don't tell the truth.*

*If we walk in the light, we have fellowship with one another and the blood of Jesus cleanses us from all sin.*

*If we confess our sins, He is faithful and righteous to forgive us the sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.*

#### **6.4.1.16 We are commanded to forgive others**

We are commanded to forgive. Many of the problems that disciples face in their own life are due to unforgiveness. If you have forgiven another person, that person owes you nothing. There is no debt they have to fulfill, there is nothing they have to do to make amends. You have released them and forgiven them their debts to you. As little children, you should learn to forgive others so the Father will forgive you.

Matthew 18:21-35; Mark 11:25-26

*Jesus told His disciples to forgive 7\*70 times, not just 7 times.*

*In the parable of debt, the king forgave inordinate debt of a servant.*

*The servant refused to forgive a fellow servant who owed him a pittance.*

*Fellow servants were grieved and told their Lord about it.*

*The Lord had the evil servant sold, he and his family, until he paid back every cent.*

*In the same way, the Father will not forgive us if we do not forgive others.*

Luke 17:1-10

*It is not possible that no occasion of stumbling will come.*

*Woe to him through whom occasion of stumbling comes.*

*If your brother sins against you, rebuke him.*

*If your brother repents, forgive him, even if he does this 7 times.*

*At this, the disciples asked Jesus to increase their faith.*

*All we need to obey the Lord is mustard seed faith.*

*When you have done what is commanded, consider yourself an unworthy servant.*

Luke 7:36-50

*A sinful woman came and wept over the feet of Jesus, washing them with tears and drying them with her hair.*

*She kissed His feet and anointed them with oil.*

*To whom much is forgiven, the same love much; to whom little is forgiven, the same love little.*

*Jesus forgave the sinful woman, saying her sins were forgiven and her faith had saved her.*

#### 6.4.1.17 Righteousness by faith

Our righteousness before the Lord is not due to works of the law. We don't get right with Him by going through a list of activities and trying with all our might to complete them. We get right with Him by confession, repentance, and cleansing by the word.

Romans 4:1-25

*Abraham was not justified by his works.*

*Abraham believed God and it was accounted to him for righteousness.*

*The promise that Abraham's offspring should be heirs was not through law but the righteousness of faith.*

*If those of the law are heirs, faith is made void and the promise of no effect.*

*The Law produces wrath; where there is no law, there is no disobedience.*

*It's of faith that it may be by grace that the promise may be sure to all the offspring.*

*God gives life to the dead and calls the things which are not as though they were.*

*Without hope, Abraham in hope believed, that he might be the father of many nations.*

*Looking to the promises of God, he didn't waver through unbelief.*

*Abraham was fully assured that what God had promised He was able to perform.*

*Jesus was delivered for our trespasses and raised for our justification.*

*The Gentiles who did not follow after it attained the righteousness of faith.*

*The Jews sought to establish their own righteousness and did not submit to God's.*

Romans 10:1-4

*Christ is the fulfillment of the law to everyone who believes.*

Galatians 2:11-21

*A man is not justified by the works of the Law, but through faith in Jesus.*

*We believe in Christ that we might be justified by faith in Christ.*

*No flesh will be justified by the works of the Law.*

*Through the law we die to the law that we might live to God.*

*We are crucified with Christ, and it is no longer we who live, but Christ lives in us.*

*The life we live in the flesh, we live by faith in the Son of God, who loves us and gave Himself up for us.*

*Don't reject God's grace; if righteousness is from the Law, Christ died for nothing.*

Philippians 3:1-6

*We are the circumcision who worship God in the Spirit, rejoice in Jesus and have no confidence in the flesh.*

#### 6.4.1.18 Personal righteousness

The Bible describes an outward righteousness. For example, if you do murder, you are outwardly unrighteous and subject to judgment under secular law. However, if you do not murder, you are outwardly righteous in this area. The same is true with adultery. You are not an adulterer unless you have committed sexual sin with someone not your spouse. However, Jesus talked of a deeper righteousness, a righteousness which exceeds that of the scribes and Pharisees. This is personal righteousness. While externally, you may not be a murderer or adulterer, in your heart you can do murder or adultery. Jesus made it clear that we need to have a righteousness which is internal, in the inward part. As little children, you will learn to be righteous in your heart and not just externally.

Matthew 5:17-20

*Jesus did not come to destroy the Law and the Prophets, but to fulfill them.*

*Unless your personal righteousness exceeds that of the scribes and Pharisees, you will not enter the Kingdom of heaven.*

Matthew 5:21-26

*The ancients said not to murder, and whoever murders is in danger of judgment.*

*If you are angry with your brother without a cause, you have committed murder in your heart.*

*Whoever calls his brother a fool will be in danger of hell fire.*

Matthew 5:27-30

*The ancients would say not to commit adultery.*

*Everyone who gazes at a woman to lust after her commits adultery with her in his heart.*

*If your right eye or your right hand causes you to stumble, get rid of them.*

*It is better that one of your members perish than that your whole body be cast into Gehenna.*

Mark 7:14-23

*Nothing from outside defiles a man, but what proceeds from inside him defiles a man.*

*Out of the heart proceeds wickedness that defiles a man and separates him from God.*

Acts 15:1-35

*Jews started teaching that people should be circumcised or they could not be saved.*

*Paul and Barnabas stood against these false teachers.*

*God testified of the Gentiles by giving them the Holy Spirit like He did the Jerusalem Church.*

*God made no distinction, cleansing the hearts of Gentiles.*

*The Jews are saved through the grace of the Lord Jesus as the Gentiles are.*

#### 6.4.1.19 Salvation comes from Jesus

There is no other name under heaven then Jesus by which we can be saved. He is our life, He is our salvation. We can only live by believing in Him. As little children, you will learn that salvation is from Jesus, and you will learn how to procure that salvation and walk in it.

Luke 2:8-14

*Jesus was born in the City of David, a Savior, Christ the Lord.*

Acts 4:1-14

*There is salvation in no other name under heaven than Jesus, whereby we might be saved.  
The apostles were bold and healed a man; the Jewish leaders recognized they had been with Jesus.*

Romans 5:1-21

*Being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus, through whom we also have our access by faith into grace in which we stand.*

*Suffering produces perseverance, which produces proven character, which produces hope.*

*Hope doesn't disappoint, because God's love is poured in our hearts by the Spirit.*

*God's love has been poured into our hearts through the Holy Spirit who was given to us.*

*God commends His love for us in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.*

*Being justified by His blood, we will be saved from God's wrath through Him.*

*If while enemies we were reconciled, much more will we be saved by His life.*

*Those who receive the abundance of grace and the gift of righteousness reign in life through Jesus.*

Romans 10:5-13

*If you confess with your mouth Jesus is Lord, and believe in your heart that God raised Him from the dead, you will be saved.*

*With the heart one believes resulting in righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made resulting in salvation.*

*Whoever will call on the name of the Lord will be saved.*

Romans 15:8-13

*Christ was made a servant of the Jews to confirm the promises given to the fathers.*

*The God of hope will fill you with all joy and peace in believing by the power of the Holy Spirit.*

#### 6.4.1.20 Disciples are blessed

Because disciples are poor in spirit, gentle, merciful, pure in heart, etc., they are blessed. As a spiritual child you need to learn to live a lifestyle which insures you being blessed by the Father.<sup>1G</sup>

Matthew 5:3-12

*Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the Kingdom of Heaven.*

*Blessed are those who mourn, for they shall be comforted.*

*Blessed are the gentle, for they shall inherit the earth.*

*Blessed are those who hunger and thirst after righteousness, for they shall be filled.*

*Blessed are the merciful, for they shall obtain mercy.*

*Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God.*

*Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called children of God.*

*Blessed are those who are persecuted for the sake of righteousness, for theirs is the Kingdom of Heaven.*

Luke 1:23-25

*The Lord took away Elizabeth's reproach before men by helping her conceive.*

## 6.5 What to do with spiritual children

- Give them a solid biblical foundation (head)
  - Teach them to overcome sin
- Show them how God changes their lives (heart)
- Show them how to be part of the work God is doing (hands)

# Chapter 7

## Spiritual young adult

### 7.1 Minister

- Equip for ministry
- Provide ministry opportunities
- Release to do ministry
- Teach them how to reach the lost, care for little children, and make disciples

### 7.2 Recognizing spiritual young adults

- Desire to serve for the good of others and God's glory
- Feel responsible for how others respond to the gospel message, i.e., pride if the person accepts, discouragement if they don't
- Desire to serve but not strategic about how to train others
- Naive about how well other believers are doing, i.e., believe others are on fire because they seem to be fine at church
- Being black-and-white about what should happen in a church

### 7.3 Representative things spiritual young adults may say

- "I love my group, but there are others who need a group like this."
- "I think I could lead a group with a little help. I have three friends I am witnessing to, but this group is too big for them."
- "Look how many are at church today - awesome! I had to walk two blocks from the closest parking spot."
- "Randy and Rachel missed group and I called to see if they are okay. Their kids have the flu, so maybe our group can make meals for them."
- "In my devotions, I came across something I have a question about."
- "I noticed that we don't have an old folk visitation team. Do you think I could be involved?"
- "I am ready to make disciples, and I will let you know if I need some help."
- "I am so exhausted. This week I called all sixty men from men's breakfast to see how they were."
- "I really blew it. One of the women in our group left the church. I must have done something wrong."

## 7.4 Needs of spiritual young adults

- Help in finding an appropriate ministry in which to serve within the church
- A spiritual parent who will debrief them about ministry experiences
- Ongoing relationships with other believers that offer encouragement and accountability
- Help establishing healthy boundaries for their families
- Guidance regarding appropriate expectations of the people they will serve
- Assistance in identifying their gifts
- Help navigating complex ministry situations

### 7.4.1 Biblical needs of spiritual young adults

#### 7.4.1.1 Pray for the Church

Spiritual young adults need to go beyond praying just for themselves and pray for the those around them. As a young person, you should learn to pray for the Church (your Church and the Universal Church), for friends and neighbors and for unbelievers you are reaching out to.

Colossians 1:9-14

*Paul prayed for the Colossians and for us.*

*That we would be filled with knowledge of God's will in all spiritual wisdom and understanding.*

*That we would walk worthy of the Lord to please Him in all respects.*

*That we would bear fruit in every good work and increase in the knowledge of God.*

*That we would be strengthened with all power, by the might of His glory.*

*Thankful that we are fit to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light.*

*Thankful that He delivered us out of darkness and translated us into the Kingdom of the Son of His love.*

*In the Son of His love we have redemption and forgiveness of sins.*

1 Thessalonians 1:2-3; 2 Thessalonians 1:11-12

*Paul prayed for the Thessalonians and for us.*

*That God would count us worthy of our calling.*

*That God would fulfill every desire of goodness and work of faith with power.*

*That the name of Jesus would be glorified in us and we glorified in Him, by the grace of God and Jesus.*

2 Thessalonians 3:1-2

*Paul asked the Thessalonians to pray for the apostles.*

*That the word would spread rapidly.*

*That they would be delivered from unreasonable and evil men.*

#### 7.4.1.2 Pray as Jesus taught

The disciples of Jesus noticed something about Him. He would pray, and then miracles would happen. He would pray, and He would have direction and insight. He would pray, and the lives of people around Him would change. They asked Jesus to teach them how to pray like that. As a spiritual young adult, you should learn to pray like that.

Matthew 6:5-15; Luke 11:1-8



*Don't pray like hypocrites who pray to be seen of men.*

*Don't use vain repetitions; your Father knows what you need before you ask.*

*When you pray, pray for "us", not for "me".*

*Ask the Father to let you bring honor and glory to His name.*

*Ask the Father to use you to see His kingdom come on earth as it is in heaven.*

*Ask the Father to empower and enable you to see His will be done on earth as it is in heaven.*

*Ask for your daily bread.*

*When you pray, forgive as you seek forgiveness.*

*If you forgive others, you will be forgiven; if you don't forgive, you will not be forgiven.*

*Ask to not be brought into temptation, but delivered from the evil one.*

*If you are persistent enough, He whom you ask will give you everything you need.*

John 17:9

*Jesus prayed for those the Father gave Him, His disciples, for they were the Father's.*

John 17:15-26

*Jesus prayed that His disciples would be sanctified in truth.*

*Jesus prayed the disciples would be one in Him and the Father, as the Father was in Him.*

*The honor that the Father gave Jesus, He gave us, so we could be one and made perfect in one.*

*The Father sent Jesus and loves us as He loves Jesus.*

*Jesus made known to the disciples the Father's name, that the Father's love and Jesus could be in them.*

### 7.4.1.3 Persevere in prayer

It is not enough to just pray. You need to keep praying. Keep asking, keep seeking, keep knocking. Don't stop until the Lord answers your prayer. Use the PUSH principle — Pray Until Something Happens. If you are praying and you see nothing happening, keep praying. As a spiritual young adult, you are learning to go beyond just yourself. This is true in your prayer life. You should pray until you see the results.

Luke 18:1-8

*Pray and do not give up.*

*Will the Son of Man find faith on earth when He comes?*

Ephesians 6:18-20

*Pray at all times in the Spirit, and be watchful in all perseverance.*

Colossians 4:2-4

*Continue steadfastly in prayer, watching in it with thanksgiving.*

1 Timothy 2:1-8

*Petitions, prayers, intercessions and giving of thanks should be made for all men.*

*Pray for kings so we can live a tranquil and quiet life.*

*God wants all people to be saved and come to the knowledge of the truth.*

*In every place pray, lifting up holy hands without anger or doubting.*

**7.4.1.4 Testify**

As a disciple, you are called to testify. This simply means that you are called to tell others about Jesus. Respectfully, graciously, and because you love people, you need to tell them what He has done in your life. As a spiritual young adult, you will learn to share Christ with others, and you will learn to lead others to Christ.

Luke 24:1-12; 24:36-49; John 20:1-10; 20:19-24

*Angels told some women Jesus had risen, and they testified to the apostles, who didn't believe.*

*Jesus corrected their doubting and told them they were witnesses of these things.*

*Jesus opened the minds of the disciples that they might understand the Scriptures.*

*Christ's suffering was necessary that repentance and remission of sin be preached to all nations.*

*The disciples were told to wait in Jerusalem for the promise of the Father so they could be clothed in power from on high.*

John 3:22-36

*John the Baptist testified about Jesus.*

*A man can receive nothing unless it has been given him from heaven.*

*Jesus must increase, and we all must decrease; Jesus came from heaven and is above all.*

*God gives the Spirit without measure.*

John 4:1-42

*The Samaritan woman at the well testified about Jesus.*

*True worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth.*

Acts 4:19-20; 5:17-42

*Peter and John were persecuted by the Jews for testifying about Jesus.*

*It is right to listen to God rather than men and tell the things you have seen and heard from God.*

Acts 21:37-28:31

*Paul testified about Jesus wherever he went.*

Romans 10:14-21

*Faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.*

Philippians 1:12-30

*To live is Christ, to die is gain.*

*Let your life be worthy of the gospel; stand firm in one Spirit and strive for the faith in nothing frightened by adversaries.*

Colossians 4:6

*Let your speech be with grace, seasoned with salt, so you can answer each one.*

2 Peter 1:16-21

*The apostles were eye-witnesses of the majesty of Jesus and they testified of it.*

*No prophesy ever came by the will of man, but holy men spoke, being moved by the Holy Spirit.*

**7.4.1.5 Authority of those who serve**

As a spiritual young adult, you still need guidance. However, you also need to learn to guide those who are spiritually younger. You are preparing to become a reproducing adult, and spiritual young adults serve others. Along with the burden and responsibility of serving, you will also begin to walk in the authority of those who serve.

2 Corinthians 10:1-18

*The weapons of servant-leaders are not of the flesh, but mighty to the casting down of strongholds.*

*The weapons of servant-leaders cast down imaginations and every high thing exalted against the knowledge of God.*

*The weapons of servant-leaders bring every thought captive to the obedience of Christ.*

*If you boast, boast in the Lord; not him who commends himself is approved, but him whom the Lord commends.*

2 Corinthians 13:1-10

*Examine yourself in the faith, test yourself; if Jesus is not in you, you are disqualified.*

*Servant-leaders pray that those they work with do no evil.*

*Servant-leaders rejoice when they are weak and those they serve are strong.*

*Use your authority as a servant-leader to see people become perfect in Jesus.*

*God gives servant-leaders authority for building up those they serve, not for tearing down.*

Galatians 1:6-24

*Paul used his authority to correct the Galatians because they received a false gospel.*

*The authority of servant-leaders does not depend on man, but on revelation from God.*

Galatians 2:1-10

*Give no place in subjection to legalistic people, not for a minute, that the truth of the gospel might continue with those you serve.*

*Remember the poor.*

**7.4.1.6 Spiritual Gifts**

As a little child, you began to experiment with spiritual gifts. Maybe you learned about some of the spiritual gifts you have. As a spiritual young adult, you need to hone your learning about spiritual gifts until you are able to use them consistently in the lives of others. God gives us gifts as He wills, and He expects us to learn to use them to serve His people. You will be required to know what your spiritual gifts are and to use them to serve others.

Romans 1:8-15

*Paul longed to see the Romans to impart to them a spiritual gift, that they would be established.*

Romans 12:3-13

*Don't think more highly of yourself than you ought; think reasonably as God has apportioned to each a measure of faith.*

*As we have many members in our bodies, and each member has a different function, so is the body of Christ.*

*Each has gifts, differing according to the grace given to us.*

*Love without hypocrisy, abhor the evil, love the good.*

*In love, be tenderly affectionate to one another; in honor, prefer one another.*

Acts 2:1-12

*On Pentecost, they were filled with the Spirit and spoke with tongues as the Spirit enabled them.*

1 Corinthians 12:1-31

*There are various kinds of gifts, but the same Spirit.*

*There are various kinds of service, but the same Lord.*

*There are various workings, but the same God who works all in all.*

*To each one the manifestation of the Spirit is given for the profit of all.*

*One Spirit produces all the gifts, distributing to each one separately as He desires.*

*All the members of the body, being many, are one body.*

*In one Spirit we were all baptized into one body, and given to drink one Spirit.*

*All members of the body are important.*

*God has set the members, each one of them, in the body, just as He desired.*

*You are the body of Christ, and members individually.*

*Earnestly desire the best gifts.*

1 Corinthians 14:1-40

*Follow after love and earnestly desire spiritual gifts, especially prophesy.*

*He who prophesies speaks to men for their edification, exhortation and consolation.*

*Since you are zealous for spiritual gifts, seek to abound in building up the Church.*

*Let all things be done to build each other up.*

*Let two or three prophets speak, and others discern.*

*You can prophesy one by one, that all may learn and all may be exhorted.*

*The spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets.*

*God is not the God of confusion, but the God of peace.*

Ephesians 4:1-16

*Walk worthy of the call with which you were called, with all lowliness, humility, patience, bearing with one another in love, eager to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace.*

*To each of us grace was given according to the measure of the gift of Christ.*

*Gifts are given for the perfecting of the saints, to the work of serving, to the building up of the body of Christ.*

*Gifts should be used until we all attain to the unity of the faith, to the knowledge of Jesus, to a full grown man, to the stature of the fullness of Christ.*

*Speaking the truth in love, we should grow up in all things into Him who is the Head.*

*The body is fitted and knit together through that which every joint supplies, by the working of each part.*

*Christ makes the body increase to the building up of itself in love.*

1 Timothy 1:6-12

*Stir up the gift of God which is in you.*

*God didn't give us a spirit of fear, but of power, love and self-control.*

1 Peter 4:7-11

*Be of sound mind, self-controlled, and sober in prayer.*

*Be earnest in your love among yourselves, for love covers a multitude of sins.*

*As each has received a gift, employ it in serving one another, as good managers of God's grace in its various forms.*

**7.4.1.7 Faith Commanded**

As disciples, we are commanded to believe. This is not just some form of mental ascent. If you have a pet, you believe you have a pet. But this is not the faith of which the Bible speaks. The faith the Bible speaks of is a confidence in the living God which changes our lives forever. In faith, we turn away from sin and hold to a path which brings life to us and to others. As a spiritual young adult, you will be expected to walk in faith, giving yourself wholly to God and His purpose. You will press in to serve God and serve others, and you will not stop believing that God will use you to build His kingdom.

Matthew 10:29-31

*Jesus said not to fear; we are valuable to the Father.*

Hebrews 3:12-19

*Don't have an evil heart of unbelief, falling away from the living God.*

*Exhort one another daily lest anyone be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin.*

*We are partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence firm to the end.*

Hebrews 4:1-13

*Fear lest perhaps you come short of a promise to enter His rest.*

*We who believe enter God's rest.*

*Those who had the good news preached to them failed because of disobedience.*

*There remains a sabbath rest for God's people; give diligence to enter that rest.*

*The word of God is living and active, piercing to the dividing of soul and spirit.*

*The word of God is able to discern the thoughts and intentions of the heart.*

Hebrews 6:13-20

*Having patiently endured, Abraham obtained the promise.*

Hebrews 11:1-40

*Faith is the assurance of things hoped for, proof of things not seen.*

*By faith, the universe was framed by the word of God, so that what is seen is made out of things which are invisible.*

*A great company of faith came before us as examples.*

*Without faith it is impossible to please God.*

*He who comes to God must believe He exists, and is a rewarder of those who seek Him.*

*By faith, men and women of God subdued kingdoms, worked out righteousness, obtained promises.*

**7.4.1.8 Disciples are called**

As a spiritual young adult, you are expected to hear the call of God for your life. You need to understand what He wants you to do, and you are expected to pursue it with all your heart. God has a plan for you, and you will do your part to see it fulfilled as He desires. You, like all Christians, are called. But it is up to you to make the calling sure and show you are chosen for the task.

Luke 1:5-17

*Zacharias and Elizabeth were both righteous before God, called to be the parents of John the Baptist.*

*John the Baptist was called of God to go before Jesus.*

Luke 1:26-38

*Mary, a virgin pledged to Joseph, was called to be the mother of Jesus.  
Behold, the servant of the Lord, be it done to me according to your word.*

Luke 1:39-56

*Elizabeth called Mary the mother of her Lord.*

Luke 1:57-80

*Elizabeth tried to call her son John, but family wouldn't have it. Zacharias wrote that his name was John,  
and his mouth was opened and he prophesied.*

Luke 2:25-35; 2:36-38

*Simeon and Anna prophesied over Jesus when Joseph and Mary brought Him to the temple.  
Jesus was the salvation of Israel who would redeem His people.*

John 21:15-22

*Peter was called of the Lord to feed His sheep, and Jesus wanted to focus him on that work.  
Jesus told Peter to follow Him.*

Luke 6:12-16

*Jesus prayed all night before He called His disciples.*

Acts 1:12-26

*While the apostles were waiting to be filled with the Spirit, they drew lots for a replacement for Judas  
Iscairiot.*

Romans 9:1-33

*Isaac was called, Ishmael was not; Jacob was called, Esau was not.  
God has mercy on whom He will have mercy, and compassion on whom He will have compassion.  
God calls whom He wills; it is not of him who wills, or of him who runs, but of God who has mercy.  
Jews following a law of righteousness didn't arrive at it; they stumbled over the stumbling stone.*

#### **7.4.1.9 Disciples bear fruit**

God is pleased when His disciples bear fruit. Fruit is spiritual virtues which come from our lives, and fruit is people coming into His Kingdom to serve Him. Both are the fruit the Lord wants you to bear. As a spiritual young adult, you need to learn to bear fruit for God. The Lord of the talents expects a return on His investment in your life.

Matthew 13:1-23; Luke 8:4-15

*In the parable of the farmer and the seed, the seed is the word of God.  
Not understanding (not doing) the word will make you unproductive.  
If you are shallow in the word, you will stumble when persecution or oppression comes.  
The cares of this world and deceitfulness of riches choke the word and make you unproductive.  
If you come to Jesus, hear the word and do not do it, you are foolish.  
If you come to Jesus, hear the word and do it, you have good soil and produce fruit, thirty, sixty or a  
hundred fold.*

Luke 19:11-27

*Parable of the minas; the Master gave his servants resources (gifts) and told them to conduct business until he came.*

*Those servants who bore fruit were blessed by the Master and given more responsibility.*

*To everyone who has, more will be given; to those who don't have, even what they have will be taken away.*

*Jesus is the true vine; every branch in Him which doesn't bear fruit, the Father takes away.*

John 15:1-11

*Every branch that bears fruit the Father prunes so it can bear more fruit.*

*The disciples were pruned because of the word Jesus spoke to them.*

*Remain in Jesus and He in you, so you will bear much fruit.*

*Whoever doesn't remain in Jesus is thrown out, withered and thrown into the fire.*

*If we remain in Him and His words remain in us, we will ask what we desire, and it will be done for us.*

*The Father is glorified if we bear much fruit; thus we will be His disciples.*

*As the Father loves Jesus, Jesus loves us; we should remain in His love.*

*If we keep His commandments, we remain in His love.*

John 15:14-27

*Disciples are friends of Jesus if they do what He said.*

*Jesus made known to His disciples everything He heard from the Father.*

*He chose the disciples, that they should go and bear fruit, and that their fruit should remain.*

*Whatever disciples ask of the Father in the name of Jesus, He will give it to them.*

*The Holy Spirit whom Jesus sent will testify about Him, and disciples will testify about Him.*

#### 7.4.1.10 Disciples run to win

It is not enough for the disciple to just run the race. We need to run the race to win. Winning doesn't mean you are the only one to make it across the finish line; it means you do what the Lord commanded faithfully and consistently. As a spiritual young adult, you are called to run to win.

1 Corinthians 9:24-27

*In a race, only one wins, so run that you can win.*

*Those strive in the games to win a corruptible crown, we an incorruptible.*

*Beat your body and bring it into subjection so after you preach to others you will not be disqualified.*

2 Corinthians 6:1-13

*Do not receive the grace of God in vain; now is the acceptable time and the day of salvation.*

*Give no occasion of stumbling in anything, but commend yourselves as servants of God.*

Philippians 3:7-16

*Consider those things which are gain as loss for Christ; suffer the loss of all things that you might know Him.*

*Pursue the righteousness which is by faith in Jesus, that which is from God by faith.*

*Press on to take hold of that for which you were taken hold of by Christ.*

*Press toward the goal for the prize of the high calling of God in Jesus.*

Hebrews 12:1-12

*Lay aside every sin which entangles you and run with perseverance the race set before you.*

*Look to Jesus, the author and perfecter of faith, who for the joy set before Him endured the cross.*

*Don't grow weary; you have not resisted to blood, striving against sin.*

**7.4.1.11 Disciples are taught of the Lord**

Jesus taught His disciples. As disciples of the Lord, by the Holy Spirit, He teaches us today as well. He brings to our remembrance what we have read in the Bible. As important as it was for the disciples of Jesus to listen to Him and then to the Holy Spirit, it is even more important for us. We do not have Jesus in the flesh and we need the direction and guidance that only He can provide.

Matthew 5:1-2

*Jesus taught His disciples about personal righteousness in the Sermon on the Mount.*

Matthew 16:5-12; Mark 8:14-21; Luke 12:1-7

*Jesus warned the disciples about the yeast (doctrine) of the Pharisees and the Sadducees.*

Mark 9:9-13

*Jesus told His disciples that John the Baptist was Elijah who was to come.*

Mark 9:30-32; 10:32-34; Luke 9:43-45

*Jesus told His disciples of his coming crucifixion in Jerusalem.*

Mark 13:24-27; 13:28-31

*Jesus taught His disciples what to look for when He returned.*

Luke 5:38-39

*New wine (life in the Spirit) must be put in new wine skins.*

Luke 17:20-37

*Jesus taught the disciples that God's kingdom was within them.*

*He had to suffer and be rejected by that generation.*

*Whoever seeks to save his life loses it, whoever loses it preserves it.*

Luke 24:13-35

*Jesus taught the two disciples on the road to Emmaus.*

*Their hearts burned within them as He taught them.*

John 6:22-66

*The crowd sought out Jesus, but not to be with Him, but for His provision.*

*Jesus taught the multitudes to work for the food which remains to eternal life.*

*Jesus taught that He was the bread of life, that His body was food indeed and His blood drink indeed.*

*Jesus came from heaven to do the Father's will, that all He sent Jesus should not perish but have eternal life, and He would raise them up.*

*Jesus is the living bread who came down from heaven; if anyone eats it he would live forever.*

*Anyone who eats the flesh of Jesus and drinks His blood lives in Him, and He in them.*

*As Jesus lives because of the Father, so we live because of Jesus.*

*The Spirit gives life, the flesh profits nothing; the words of Jesus are spirit and life.*

John 17:14

*Jesus gave the disciples the Father's words, and the world hated them.*



**7.4.1.12 Disciples are tested**

As a disciple, you will be tested. This means that you will have opportunities to turn away from the Lord and not believe. You will be tempted by the devil with things you really want. Some of those are good things, like a spouse, or children, or a home. The Lord wants you to have these things, but they can become a stumbling block in our lives. The Lord has a timing in you receiving good things from His hand. You need to submit to that timing. Other things you may be tempted with are not good, like sex outside of the covenant of marriage. As a spiritual young adult, you will have to fight temptation and pass the tests of life. It's those who endure to the end who receive the prize.

Matthew 4:2-10; Luke 4:3-13

*Jesus was tempted by the devil (diablo, Gk for accuser) and he fought it off with the word.*

Mark 13:1-23; Luke 21:5-33

*Many would come in His name saying they were Him, and would lead many astray.*

*Wars and rumors of wars should not trouble us, because these things must happen.*

*The gospel will be preached to all nations.*

*When delivered up, don't be anxious or premeditate what to say; the Spirit will speak through you.*

*Disciples will be hated by all men for His sake, but he who endures to the end will be saved.*

*Watch; Jesus told us of these things beforehand.*

Mark 14:26-31; Luke 22:31-34; John 13:36-38

*The disciples were all scattered, like sheep, and stumbled because of Him.*

*Satan asked Jesus for the disciples that he might sift them as wheat.*

*Jesus told Peter to establish his brothers after he turned (repented).*

*Peter said he would die before he denied Him; all the disciples said the same.*

Mark 14:66-72; Luke 22:54-62; John 18:15-18; 18:25-27

*Peter denied that he knew Jesus three times while Jesus was in the courtyard of the High Priest.*

Luke 7:18-23

*Jesus told John's disciples to report back the miracles He did.*

*Blessed is he who finds no occasion for stumbling in Jesus.*

**7.4.1.13 Disciples confess Him before men**

As a disciple, you have a responsibility to confess Jesus before men. Peer pressure will try to hinder you from doing this. The desire to be accepted among a group of people can drive us as humans. However, if you do not confess Jesus before men, He will not confess you in heaven. Your life with Him is dependent on your obedience to proclaim Him as your Lord. As a spiritual young adult, this is one of the areas in which you need to be strong and overcome.

Matthew 10:32-42

*Whoever confesses Jesus before men, He will confess before the Father in heaven.*

*Whoever denies Jesus before men, He will deny before the Father in heaven.*

*He who loves his family more than he loves Jesus isn't worthy of Jesus.*

*He who doesn't take his cross and follow Him isn't worthy of Him.*

*He who seeks his life will lose it, he who loses his life for Jesus will find it.*

*Whoever receives a disciple, receives Jesus; whoever receives Jesus, receives the Father who sent Him.*

Luke 12:8-9

*Everyone who confesses Jesus before men, He will confess before the angels of God.*

**Disciples Face Persecution**

Jesus made it clear that disciples will be persecuted. There are people who hate Christianity. These people are often driven by and used by demonic powers which hate you and hate Jesus. We have an obligation as disciples to remain faithful to Jesus in the face of persecution. If we hold on to Him and refuse to relent, we will be accepted by Him. As a spiritual young adult, you will be persecuted. Do not face it alone; ask others to stand with you in the persecution. But determine in yourself that you *will* face it and you will do so victoriously. The Lord wants you to overcome.

Matthew 10:16-28

*Jesus sent His disciples out as sheep among wolves.*

*Be wise as serpents and harmless as doves.*

*Beware of men; they will deliver you up to be scourged.*

*When persecuted, don't be anxious about what to say; it is not you who speaks, but the Holy Spirit.*

*You will be hated by all men for the sake of Jesus.*

*A disciple should be like his Teacher and Lord.*

*If they called the Master of the house Beelzebul, how much more you of His household.*

Mark 15:21

*The Romans compelled Simon of Cyrene, father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear the cross of Jesus.*

Luke 6:1-5

*The Pharisees persecuted Jesus because He didn't "uphold" the Sabbath per their traditions.*

Luke 6:24-26

*Woe when men speak well of you, for so their fathers did to the false prophets.*

John 16:1-6

*Those who persecute disciples do so because they do not know the Father or Jesus.*

John 16:16-33

*On the day the disciples saw Jesus again, they should ask of the Father in His name, and He would give to them.*

*Ask, and you will receive, that your joy may be made full.*

*The disciples would be scattered, everyone to their own place, and leave Jesus alone.*

*In the world you will have trouble, but Jesus overcame the world.*

Acts 12:5-17

*Herod put Peter in prison, but the Churches prayed, and an angel set him free.*

Acts 13:43-52

*Paul preached in a synagogue in Pisidian Antioch and many followed Paul and Barnabas.*

*The Jews there were jealous of Paul and Barnabas and persecuted them.*

*As many as were appointed to eternal life believed, and the Lord's word was spread through that region.*

*The disciples were filled with joy and the Holy Spirit.*

Acts 14:19-20

*Paul and Barnabas had success in Lycaonia, Lystra and Derbe.*

*In Lystra a multitude stoned Paul and dragged him out of the city, supposing him dead.*

Acts 19:23-41

*In Ephesus, a silversmith who made idols stirred up persecution against Paul because Paul was so successful.*

2 Corinthians 1:3-11

*The Father comforts us in our afflictions so we can comfort others; as suffering abounds, so comfort abounds.*

*Paul and his team had a sentence of death in them, that they should not trust in themselves, but in God who raised the dead.*

2 Timothy 4:9-15

*Alexander the coppersmith did much evil to Paul, greatly opposing them; the Lord would repay him according to his deeds.*

2 Timothy 4:16-22

*No one but the Lord stood beside Paul at his first defense; the Lord strengthened him.*

*Paul was delivered out of the mouth of the lion; the Lord delivered him from every evil work.*

#### 7.4.1.14 Walk in God's will

God wants you to do His good pleasure on the earth. As a disciple, you are obligated to determine those things which please Him and pursue them. As a spiritual young adult, you will be expected to seek the Lord and do those things which please Him, even if you find those things difficult. You will be expected to overcome in every area of your life.

Luke 2:1-7

*Joseph went to Bethlehem with Mary who gave birth to Jesus there, fulfilling Scripture.*

Revelation 3:1-22

*For the Churches in Revelation, Jesus prescribed the cure: repentance, for the most part.*

*He who overcomes will eat from the tree of life which is in the Paradise of God.*

*He who overcomes won't be harmed by the second death.*

*He who overcomes will receive the hidden manna and a white stone on which a new name is written which no one knows but him who receives it.*

*To him who overcomes Jesus will give authority over the nations and the morning star.*

*He who overcomes will be arrayed in white garments, his name will not be blotted from the book of life, and Jesus will confess him before His Father.*

*He who overcomes Jesus will make a pillar in the temple, will write on him the name of God and the name of the City of God which comes down out of heaven, and the new name of Jesus.*

*He who overcomes will sit down on the throne of Jesus, as Jesus overcame and sat at His Father's throne.*

*It is the will of the Lord that we overcome.*

#### 7.4.1.15 Walk in perseverance

As a spiritual young adult, you will be required to walk in perseverance. You are called to overcome and you will not do so without setting your face like flint toward the goal and refusing to give up.

James 5:7-11

*Be patient until the coming of the Lord.*

*Establish your hearts, for the coming of the Lord is at hand.*

*Don't grumble against one another, so that you won't be judged.*

*Look to the perseverance of Job, and the outcome; the Lord is full of compassion and mercy.*

1 Peter 4:1-6

*Christ suffered in the flesh; you should arm yourself with the same mind.*

*When you have suffered you have ceased from sin that you should no longer live the rest of your time in the flesh for the lusts of men, but for the will of God.*

*We will all give account to Him who is ready to judge the living and the dead.*

#### 7.4.1.16 Walk in the Spirit

As disciples, we are called to live our lives by the grace and guidance of the Holy Spirit. This is not a Biblical suggestion; it is a command. There is a reason the devil and his minions try to down play the importance of following the Holy Spirit. This is because you cannot succeed in overcoming without the power and enabling of the Holy Spirit. In the modern era, the devil has been able to keep millions of people as spiritual little children by keeping them from following the Holy Spirit. Our calling as disciples is too great to accomplish without the Holy Spirit's guidance and power. As a spiritual young adult, you must learn how to walk in the Spirit.

Acts 1:4-8

*Wait for the promise of the Father; you will be baptized in the Holy Spirit not many days hence.*

*You will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes upon you, and you will be witnesses of Jesus.*

Acts 4:23-37

*Peter and John responded with boldness when they were hauled before the Sanhedrin.*

*The apostles prayed, and the place where they were gathered was shaken.*

*They were all filled with the Holy Spirit and they spoke the word of God with boldness.*

*With great power the apostles gave testimony of the resurrection; great grace was on them all.*

Acts 6:1-15; 7:1-60

*The Church in Jerusalem selected seven men of good report and full of the Spirit to wait on tables so the apostles would not have to forsake the word; these were the first deacons.*

*Stephen, full of faith and the Holy Spirit, performed signs and wonders among the people.*

*Some disputed with Stephen, but they were unable to withstand the wisdom and the Spirit by which he spoke.*

*The people disputing with Stephen used character assassination to stir up the multitude against him.*

Romans 12:1-2

*Present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy and acceptable to God, which is your spiritual service.*

*Don't be conformed to the world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, so you may prove what is the good, well-pleasing and perfect will of God.*

2 Corinthians 5:1-10

*God gave us the down payment of the Spirit; we walk by faith and not by sight.*

*We make it our aim, whether absent or at home in the body, to be well pleasing to the Lord.*

*We will all appear before the judgment seat of Christ to receive what we did in the body, good or bad.*

Galatians 3:1-29; 4:1-31

*You did not receive the Spirit by the works of the law, but by hearing of faith.*

*You cannot complete in the flesh what is begun by the Spirit.*

*He who supplies the Spirit to us and does miracles among us does it by the hearing of faith.*

*Abraham believed God and it was accounted to him as righteousness; those of faith are children of Abraham and blessed with Abraham.*

*The blessing of Abraham came on the Gentiles through Christ, that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.*

*Those of the works of the law are under a curse.*

*We are all children of God through faith in Jesus, baptized into Christ and having put on Christ.*

*God sent His Son, born to a woman, to redeem us so we could be adopted as children.*

*Because we are children, God sent the Spirit of His Son into our hearts, crying, "Abba, Father."*

Galatians 5:1-12; 5:16-26

*Stand firm in the liberty by which Christ made you free; do not be entangled again with the yoke of bondage.*

*We through the Spirit by faith wait for the hope of righteousness.*

*In Christ only faith working through love is important; walk by the Spirit and you won't fulfill the lust of the flesh.*

*If you are led by the Spirit, you are not under the law.*

*Those who practice the deeds of the flesh will not inherit the Kingdom of God.*

*The fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faith, gentleness and self-control.*

*Those who belong to Christ have crucified the flesh with its passions and lusts.*

*If we live by the Spirit, let us also walk by the Spirit, not conceited, not provoking nor envying each other.*

Ephesians 5:8-21

*We were once darkness, but now we are light in the world.*

*Walk as children of light; the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness, righteousness and truth, proving what pleases the Lord.*

*Have no fellowship with the unfruitful deeds of darkness, but rather reprove them.*

*All things when they are reprovved are revealed by light; everything that reveals is light.*

*Watch carefully how you walk, not as unwise, but as wise, redeeming the time.*

*Don't be drunk with wine, which is dissipation, but be filled with the Spirit.*

Philippians 1:3-11

*He who began a good work in you will complete it until the day of Christ.*

Philippians 4:1-7

*Stand firm in the Lord, rejoice in Him always, let your gentleness be known to all men.*

*In nothing be anxious, but in everything by prayer and petition let your requests be made known to God.*

Colossians 3:1-4

*Seek the things that are above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God.*

*Set your mind on things that are above, not in the things that are on the earth.*

*You died, and your life is hidden with Christ in God.*

*When Christ our life is revealed, then you will also be revealed with him in Glory.*

1 Thessalonians 4:1-8

*Receive from godly men how you ought to walk to please God, and abound in it more and more.*

*This is the will of God, your sanctification; God called us not for uncleanness, but in sanctification and honor.*

*He who rejects this doesn't reject man, but God, who has given His Spirit to us.*

1 Thessalonians 5:14-22

*Don't quench the Spirit; don't despise prophecies; test all things; hold firmly to the good; abstain from every form of evil.*

Hebrews 13:1-25

*Marriage is honorable in all and the bed undefiled.*

*Be free from the love of money, content with what you have.*

*Don't be carried away by strange doctrines; confirm your heart in grace.*

*Imitate the faith of your leaders, those who speak the word of God to you.*

*Jesus is the same yesterday, today and forever.*

*May the God of peace who rose Jesus make you complete in every good work to do His will.*

1 Peter 2:5-10

*As living stones we are built up as a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer sacrifices acceptable to God.*

*You are a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for God's own possession.*

*You proclaim the excellence of Him who called you out of darkness into His marvelous light.*

1 John 2:15-17

*Do not love the world or the things that are in the world; if you love the world, the Father's love is not in you.*

*All that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, isn't the Father's.*

*The world is passing away with its lusts, but he who does God's will remains forever.*

1 John 3:21-24

*Whatever we ask we receive from Him, because we keep His commandments and do what is pleasing to Him.*

*By this we know that He remains in us, by the Spirit which He gave us.*

1 John 4:1-6

*Do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits, whether they are of God.*

*You are of God and have overcome them, because greater is He who is in you than he who is in the world.*

#### **7.4.1.17 Walk in unity**

One of the greatest ploys of the devil is to bring division to the Church of Jesus. Division causes us to not trust each other. Division produces dissension and hatred toward one another. Division is an abomination to the Lord. You can have differing opinions about things, but the scripture warns that you should avoid a divisive man. It is important that we walk in unity, that we be united in our pursuit of the Lord. As a spiritual young adult, you will need to learn to walk in unity with the Church. You will need to learn how to base your opinions on what the Bible says, and not what your parents or your culture says. You must learn to express your opinions in a way that does not close off the validity of the opinions of others. And you will need to learn how to value other people regardless of their opinions.

Luke 9:49-50

*Jesus told his disciples to not forbid someone casting out demons in His name.*

Romans 16:17-27

*Look out for those who cause divisions and occasions of stumbling, contrary to the doctrine, and turn away from them.*

*These don't serve Jesus, but their own bellies.*

*By their smooth and flattering speech, they deceive the hearts of the innocent.*

*Be wise in that which is good, but innocent in that which is evil.*

*The God of peace will quickly crush Satan under our feet.*

1 Corinthians 1:10-31

*We should all speak the same thing, and there should be no divisions among us.*

*We should be perfected together in the same mind and in the same judgment.*

*Jesus wasn't divided.*

*Not many are called wise according to the flesh, not many mighty or noble.*

*God chose the foolish things, the weak things, the lowly things to put to shame the wise, strong, and fleshly boasting.*

*Because of the Father we are in Christ, our wisdom from God, our righteousness, sanctification and redemption.*

1 Corinthians 6:1-8

*Do not sue your brothers before a secular court rather than before the saints.*

*You should be wronged or defrauded rather than wrong and defraud your brothers.*

#### **7.4.1.18 Walk in wisdom**

Wisdom is important. The wisdom from above is peaceful, gracious and considerate. We as disciples need to learn to walk in wisdom. As a spiritually young adult, you will be required to put off childish behaviors and attitudes. You will need to learn to walk in wisdom.

Colossians 4:5

*Walk in wisdom toward those who are outside, redeeming the time.*

1 Thessalonians 4:11-12

*Lead a quiet life, and do your own business, and work with your own hands.*

*Walk properly toward those who are outside, and have need of nothing.*

Ephesians 1:15-23

*The Father wants to give the church a spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him.*

*The Father wants the eyes of our hearts enlightened, that we may know what is the hope of His calling.*

*The Father wants us to know the riches of His inheritance in the saints, and His power towards believers.*

*The same power that raised Jesus from the dead works in us.*

*The Father had the risen Jesus sit at His right hand, above all rule, authority, power, dominion and every other name.*

*The Father gave Jesus to be head over all things for the Church, His body, the fullness of Him who fills all.*

1 Corinthians 7:17-24

*As the Lord distributed to each man, as God called each, so let him walk.*

*Each person should stay in whatever condition he was called and be content where he is.*

*If a bond-servant could get free they should use it, but otherwise they should be content as they are.*

Acts 22:22-30

*Paul used his Roman citizenship to keep from being beaten by the Romans in Jerusalem.*

Matthew 7:6

*Don't give what is holy (non-hypocritical correction in love) to the dogs.*

*Don't throw pearls (godly correction in love) before swine, lest they trample them, turn and tear you to pieces.*

1 Corinthians 3:16-23

*We are the temple of God, and God's Spirit lives in us.*

*If anyone destroys God's temple, He will destroy him; God's temple is holy.*

*If anyone thinks himself wise in the world, let him become a fool that he may be wise.*

*The wisdom of the world is foolishness with God.*

*Don't boast of men, for all things are yours (God's people), and you are Christ's and Christ is God's.*

#### 7.4.1.19 Give generously

A clear litmus test of your commitment to the Lord is in your giving. As disciples, we are called to give. We need to give of our time, of our support, and of our monetary resources. The principle of giving is rooted in the principle of sowing and reaping. As a spiritual young adult, you will need to learn to give to meet the needs of others.

Matthew 6:1-4

*Do not do your charitable giving before men, to be seen by them.*

*When you do merciful deeds, don't sound a trumpet before you as the hypocrites do; do them in secret.*

Mark 12:41-44; Luke 21:1-4

*A poor widow gave more than all others, because she gave out of her lack all she had.*

Luke 6:37-38

*Don't judge and you won't be judged; don't condemn and you won't be condemned.*

*Set free and you will be set free; give and it will be given to you, the same measure measured back to you.*

1 Corinthians 16:1-4

*On the first day of the week, each one save for giving as he may prosper.*

2 Corinthians 8:1-15

*Abound in giving as you abound in everything.*

*Know the grace of Jesus, that though He was rich, yet for your sakes He became poor, that you through His poverty might become rich.*

2 Corinthians 9:1-15

*He who sows bountifully will also reap bountifully.*

*Give according as you have determined in your heart, not grudgingly or under compulsion; God loves a cheerful giver.*

*He who supplies seed for the sower and bread will supply your seed for sowing.*

*You will be enriched in everything to all generosity.*

Philippians 4:10-20



*We need to learn to be content in whatever state we are in, to be filled and hungry, to abound and be in need.*

*We can do all things through Christ who strengthens us.*

*God will supply every need according to His riches in glory in Christ Jesus.*

1 Timothy 6:17-19

*Charge the rich to not be arrogant nor have their hopes in riches, but on the living God who provides them everything.*

*The rich should do good, be rich in good works, be ready to distribute, willing to share.*

#### **7.4.1.20 Courage**

It takes courage to confess Jesus before men. It takes courage to face persecution. It takes courage to overcome our own sin and to overcome the devil. It takes courage to live in love. As a spiritual young adult, you will need to learn to approach the challenges of the disciple's life courageously.

1 Corinthians 16:13-14

*Watch and stand firm in the faith.*

*Be courageous and be strong.*

*Let everything you do be done in love.*

Matthew 17:7-8

*Stand up and do not be afraid.*

#### **7.4.1.21 God's will**

It takes an unwavering commitment to bringing God's will to earth to be a disciple. This is something the Holy Spirit breathes into us as we yield to Him.

Ephesians 3:14-21

*God wants us strengthened with power through His Spirit in the inner person.*

*God wants Christ to dwell in our hearts through faith.*

*God wants us rooted and grounded in love, and strengthened to comprehend His love.*

*The Father wants us filled with all the fullness of God.*

*God is able to do abundantly above all that we ask or think according to His power that works in us.*

2 Timothy 2:1-7

*God wants us strengthened in the grace that is in Jesus.*

*God wants us to commit the things we have heard to faithful men who will be able to teach others also.*

*God wants us to endure hardship with others as a good soldier, not entangling ourselves with the affairs of this life.*

*God wants us to compete as an athlete; we are not crowned unless we compete by the rules.*

*God wants us to get the first share of the crop as a farmer who labors.*

**7.4.1.22 Hold fast**

Much of the life of an overcomer is summarized in one thing: hold fast what you have attained. Don't slip back. Don't lose any of the ground you have attained. This involves commitment, strength and persistence. It also involves understanding that you are a steward, and that the Lord has put you in charge of important resources. Sometimes, all you can do is stand. As a spiritual young adult, you need to learn to stand and to not fall back.

1 Timothy 1:18-20

*Paul gave Timothy instructions according to prophecies given to him so by them he might wage a good warfare.*

*Paul told Timothy to wage a good warfare, holding faith and a good conscience.*

1 Timothy 6:11-16

*Flee evil (arguments, strife, the love of money) and pursue righteousness, godliness, faith, love, gentleness.*

*Fight the good fight of faith, take hold of eternal life to which you were called.*

*Keep the command without spot, blameless until His appearing.*

1 Timothy 6:20-21

*Guard what is committed to you, turning away from vain arguments.*

2 Timothy 2:8-13

*If we die with Him, we will live with Him; if we endure, we will reign with Him.*

*If we deny Him, He will deny us; if we are faithless, He remains faithful.*

2 Thessalonians 2:1-12

*Do not be quickly shaken in your minds, or troubled; do not let anyone deceive you.*

*The lawless one will do works of Satan, signs and lying wonders with deception of wickedness for those being lost.*

*God wants us to love the truth so by it we may be saved.*

*Those will be judged who don't believe the truth, but have pleasure in unrighteousness.*

**7.4.1.23 Use healing and miracles**

Healing and miracles are still for today. Jesus commanded His disciples to heal the sick and raise the dead. This is one of the strategies that He used to build the New Testament church. Miracles, in conjunction with sharing the word of the Lord with people, push past the immediate circumstances and make the message clear and meaningful. It is easy to tell someone God loves them. But if you tell them God loves them, and then you heal them by the power of the Holy Spirit, the message is much more meaningful. As a spiritual young adult, you will be expected to believe God for miracles. God is no respecter of persons. If you ask for miracles, and you believe Him for miracles, God will do miracles through you.

Matthew 4:23-25; 9:35-38; 20:29-34; Mark 7:31-37; Luke 4:31-41; 7:11-17; John 5:1-10

*Jesus healed every disease and sickness among the people.*

*Because Jesus did miracles, great multitudes followed Him and heard His teaching.*

*Jesus had compassion on the sick and oppressed and healed based on their request.*

Mark 5:14-20

*Jesus told the Gadarene demoniac to go tell his people what God did for him; he told them what Jesus did for him.*

John 9:1-7

*Jesus healed a man blind from birth; Jesus did the works of the Father who sent Him while it was day. The night is coming when no one can work; Jesus is the light of the world.*

John 11:1-45

*Jesus raised Lazarus from the dead; He is the resurrection and the life. Whoever believes in Jesus will still live, even if he dies.*

John 20:30-31

*Jesus did many signs so people would believe He is the Christ, the Son of God, and might have life in His name.*

Acts 5:12-16

*The apostles did many signs and wonders among the people.*

Acts 9:36-43

*Peter prayed, God raised Tabatha, and many in that region believed in the Lord.*

Acts 16:1-40

*Paul and Silas did miracles in Philippi, and a jailer and his household (oikos) were saved.*

*Paul told the jailer to believe, he and his household, and they would be saved.*

*The jailer was baptized with his household, and they rejoiced greatly.*

Acts 28:1-16

*On an island called Malta after a ship wreck, Paul did many miracles and healed people.*

Romans 15:14-33

*Grace is given to us by God, that we should be servants of Christ; we should boast only in Christ.*

*Christ worked signs and wonders by the Spirit through Paul for the obedience of the Gentiles.*

1 Corinthians 2:1-16

*Paul didn't come to the Corinthians with excellence of speech or wisdom.*

*Paul determined to know nothing among them but Jesus Christ and Him crucified.*

*His speech and preaching were not in persuasive words of human wisdom.*

*Paul demonstrated the Spirit's power, that their faith would not be in the wisdom of men but the power of God.*

## 7.5 What to do with spiritual young adults

### 7.5.1 Help them understand ministry

#### 7.5.1.1 Defend the gospel

- Teach them when to speak and when to be quiet, and whether someone is really seeking the gospel
- Teach them basic information about apologetics, the importance of not arguing anyone into the faith, and how to refute the basic attacks against Christianity
- Give them an overview of the basic variations of evangelical Christianity (charismatic, non-charismatic, etc.)
- Teach them the key doctrines of the Christian Faith and how to explain each accurately
- Help them discern between salvation issues and non salvation issues
- Give them an overview of the common cults and what they teach
- Explain how to answer complex questions

**7.5.1.2 Work under and with the elders and pastors**

- Help them understand how the church works
- Teach them what it means to be accountable to pastors and elders
- Help them understand the big picture of ministry: reaching the area, the nation, the world

**7.5.2 Help them to be ministers****7.5.2.1 Equip them to be courageous**

- Teach them when to confront
- Teach them how to confront
- Teach them when to leave a church or relationship
- Teach them the need to be accountable, approachable and not defensive

**7.5.2.2 Help them learn to work with a team**

- Help them become people who value others because others see what we can't and can fill in where we are unable
- Help them give glory to God for whatever is accomplished
- Encourage them to see the gifts of others
- Encourage them to notice the needs of others (hurting people, etc) and encourage them to seek help

**7.5.2.3 Teach them to be disciplined and responsible**

- Teach them to follow through on their commitments
- Teach them to be lifelong learners
- Teach them to be financially obedient
- Teach them to structure their lives so they have time to serve others
- Give them opportunities to do ministry (hands)

# Chapter 8

## Spiritual Parents

### 8.1 Disciple

- Explain the discipleship process
- Release to disciple others with your help
- Release to disciple alone
- Teach them to oversee discipleship
- Teach them to oversee the dream of God for the Church

### 8.2 Recognizing spiritual parents

- Think in terms of what a team (rather than an individual) can do
- Have a coaching mindset
- Want to see the people they work with mature and become fellow workers who love them but aren't dependent on them to complete the mission
- Think in terms of how to help a young believer take the next step in his or her development

### 8.3 Representative things spiritual parents might say

- "This guy at work asked me to explain the Bible to him. Pray for me."
- "We get to baptize someone from our small group tonight. When is the next beginners class? I want to get her plugged into ministry somewhere."
- "Our small group is going on a mission trip. I have given each person a different responsibility. Where do you think we should go?"
- "I realized discipleship happens at home, too. Will you hold me accountable to spend time discipling my kids?"
- "I have a person in my small group who is passionate about children. How can I best find a ministry opportunity for her?"

### 8.4 Needs of spiritual parents

- Team to be part of
- An invitation and some direction
- To be released and supported
- Ongoing relationships with co-laborers

## 8.4.1 Biblical needs of spiritual parents

### 8.4.1.1 Teach against evil doctrine

Spiritual parents are those who have overcome sin in their lives and who have overcome the devil in their lives. They have overcome the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the boastful pride of life. They know what evil doctrine looks like, and can teach against it.

1 Timothy 4:1-5

*Paul told Timothy to teach against seducing spirits and doctrines of demons.*

2 John 1:7-13

*Many deceivers have gone out in the world, those who don't confess that Jesus came in the flesh.*

*Watch yourself and don't lose the things you have accomplished.*

*Whoever transgresses and doesn't remain in the doctrine of Christ doesn't have God.*

### 8.4.1.2 Teach with authority

Like Jesus, spiritual parents should teach with authority. As a spiritual parent, you should be an example, demonstrating your teaching by your life. You should pay attention to your teaching, because in doing so you will save yourself and those who follow you.

Matthew 7:28-29

*Jesus taught with authority.*

Acts 18:1-23

*Disciples should be unafraid and speak and not be silent.*

Acts 19:1-22

*Paul taught boldly in Ephesus and the Lord did special miracles at his hands.*

*Because of Paul's work and the work of those with him, the word of the Lord grew and became mighty.*

1 Timothy 4:6-16

*Command and teach and be a good example.*

*Be an example in word, way of life, love, spirit, faith and purity.*

*Pay attention to yourself and your teaching, for in doing this you will save yourself and those who hear you.*

2 Timothy 4:1-8

*Preach the word, in season and out of season, correct, rebuke.*

*Be sober in all things, suffer hardship, do the work of an evangelist, fulfill your ministry.*

Titus 3:9-11

*Shun foolish questions and disputes about the Law.*

*Avoid a factious man after the first and second warning.*

**8.4.1.3 Teach with integrity**

Spiritual parents need to teach with integrity. This begins with living what they teach and modeling it for the young ones. Spiritual parents must shun all uncleanness, error and deception in their teaching. The tongue is a restless evil, and spiritual parents must master it and overcome their own weaknesses in this area.

Luke 1:1-4

*Luke the physician laid out Luke and Acts, the story of Christianity, accurately from the beginning.*

Acts 14:1-18

*Paul and Barnabas taught the word of His grace and the Lord granted signs and wonders.*

Romans 2:17-24

*Teach with integrity; live what you teach.*

Ephesians 3:1-13

*Paul preached the unspeakable riches of Christ to the Gentiles.*

*The manifold wisdom of God is made known to principalities and powers in the heavens through the Church.*

Colossians 1:24-29

*Proclaim Jesus, admonishing and teaching every man so you might present every man perfect in Christ.*

1 Thessalonians 2:1-6

*Do not teach out of uncleanness, error or deception.*

*Speak not to please men, but God, who tests your heart.*

1 Timothy 1:3-7

*Command men not to teach a different doctrine.*

*The goal of this command is love out of a pure heart, a good conscience and sincere faith.*

1 Timothy 6:3-5

*If anyone teaches a different doctrine, he is conceited, knows nothing, and is obsessed with arguments, disputes and word battles.*

*Withdraw from people of corrupt minds and destitute of the truth who suppose godliness is a means of gain.*

2 Timothy 1:13-17

*Hold to the pattern of sound words in the faith and love that is in Christ.*

2 Timothy 2:14-18; 2:20-26

*Don't argue about words, to the subverting of those who hear.*

*Diligently show yourself approved as one who handles the Word of Truth accurately.*

*Flee youthful lusts, and pursue righteousness, faith, love and peace with those who call on the Lord from a pure heart.*

*Do not quarrel, but be gentle toward all, able to teach, patient, in gentleness correcting those who oppose you.*

Titus 2:1-10

*Teach things which fit sound doctrine.*

*In all things, show yourself an example of good works.*

*In teaching, show integrity, seriousness, incorruptibility and soundness of speech.*

James 3:1-18

*Let not many be teachers, knowing they receive heavier judgment.*

*Whoever doesn't stumble in word is perfect, able to bridle the whole body.*

*The tongue is a restless evil, full of deadly poison.*

*The wise and understanding should show by his good conduct that his deeds are done in the gentleness of wisdom.*

*The wisdom from above is pure, peaceful, gentle, reasonable, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, without hypocrisy.*

#### 8.4.1.4 Jesus was sent by the Father

Just as the Father sent Jesus, Jesus will send spiritual parents to meet the needs of His lambs. Jesus has authority over all flesh. As a spiritual adult, it is your responsibility to believe Him for eternal life for those to whom you minister.

John 12:32-50

*Jesus said if He were lifted up, He would draw all men to Himself.*

*Walk in the light and believe the light while you still have it.*

*Jesus came as a light into the world, so whoever believes would not remain in darkness.*

*Jesus spoke not from Himself, but He spoke from the Father who sent Him.*

John 14:5-11

*Jesus is the way and the truth and the life; no one comes to the Father except through Him.*

*Jesus didn't do the works, but the Father in Him did the works.*

*Jesus is in the Father and the Father in Him.*

John 17:1-8

*The Father gave Jesus authority over all flesh, so He could give eternal life to those given to Him.*

*Eternal life is to know the Father, the only true God, and Jesus whom He sent.*

*The disciples of Jesus knew He came from the Father and believed that the Father sent Him.*

*Jesus accomplished the work the Father gave Him to do.*

#### 8.4.1.5 Bear burdens

Spiritual parents have a responsibility to bear the weaknesses of the weak and restore those caught in a fault. You must do this in a spirit of gentleness. You need to learn to sow to the Spirit and not to the flesh. Spiritual parents, having overcome sin and the devil, need to overcome the subtle areas of selfishness in their lives, and be the servants others need.

Romans 15:1-7

*The strong ought to bear the weaknesses of the weak and not please themselves.*

*Each should please his neighbor for that which is good, to build him up.*

*Christ didn't please Himself.*

*Accept one another, as Christ accepted you, to the glory of God.*

Galatians 6:1-10



*The spiritual should restore someone caught in a fault with a spirit of gentleness.*

*Bear one another's burdens and so fulfill the law of Christ.*

*A man deceives himself when he thinks himself something and he is nothing.*

*Each man will have to carry his own load.*

*Don't be deceived, God is not mocked; whatever a man sows, that will he also reap.*

*He who sows to the flesh will from the flesh reap corruption.*

*He who sows to the Spirit will from the Spirit reap eternal life.*

*Don't be weary in doing good, for we will reap in due season if we don't give up.*

#### 8.4.1.6 Jesus modeled serving

As Jesus modeled serving, spiritual parents need to model serving for the younger ones in their midst. In humility and love, spiritual parents need to empty themselves and love their charges to the end.

John 13:1-11

*Jesus knew His time to depart had come; having loved His own, He loved them to the end.*

*Jesus knew God had given all things into His hands and He came from God and returned to God.*

*Jesus poured water into a basin, washed the disciple's feet and dried them with a towel.*

John 13:12-20

*The disciples called Him Teacher and Lord, and rightly so, for so He was.*

*If He washed their feet, they ought to wash one another's feet.*

*Jesus gave the disciples an example that they should do as He had done.*

*A servant is not greater than his Lord, nor he who is sent greater than he who sent him.*

Philippians 2:5-11

*Have the same mind in yourself as Jesus, who existed in the form of God but emptied Himself to serve.*

*Jesus humbled Himself, becoming obedient to the point of death, even the death of the cross.*

*The Father exalted Jesus, giving Him a name above all names.*

*At the name of Jesus, every knee will bow; those in heaven, on earth and under the earth.*

*Every tongue will confess that Jesus is Lord, to the glory of the Father.*

#### 8.4.1.7 Overseers and servants

Spiritual parents are the overseers of the works of God, coordinating the ministry activities. They are called to serve the spiritually young. They must be blameless, have a good reputation and be able to exhort in sound doctrine.

1 Timothy 3:1-13

*An elder (bishop) should have good character and a good reputation.*

*An overseer (bishop) should have a good testimony among those who are outside.*

*A servant (deacon) should have good character and a good reputation.*

*Let servants (deacons) be tested and let them serve if they are blameless.*

*The wife of a servant (deacon) should have good character and a good reputation.*

*The servants who serve well gain good standing and great boldness in the faith which is in Jesus.*

*An elder must hold to the faithful word according to the teaching, that he may be able to exhort in sound doctrine.*

Titus 1:1-9

*Elders are God's stewards and must be blameless.*

1 Peter 5:1-4

*Elders are to shepherd the flock, exercise oversight and be good examples.*

*When the Chief Shepherd is revealed, elders will receive the crown of glory that doesn't fade away.*

**8.4.1.8 Serve God's people**

Being a parent *is* being a servant. It is unfortunate that many worldly parents are less mature than their children in some respects. Being a parent means you need to get your big girl AND big boy panties on and get the job done. Spiritual parents need to serve and be a good example to the flock.

Acts 20:7-12

*In Troas Paul preached late into the night as he would leave for Jerusalem the next day.*

*A boy fell asleep and fell from a window and died; Paul raised him from the dead.*

*They brought the boy in alive and Paul continued speaking until the morning.*

Colossians 4:7-19

*Epaphras always strove with great zeal for the Colossians in prayer.*

*Epaphras prayed for the churches that they would stand perfect and complete in all the will of God.*

1 Timothy 5:1-25

*Honor widows who are widows indeed.*

*Anyone who doesn't provide for his own household has denied the faith and is worse than an unbeliever.*

*Elders who rule well should be counted worthy of double honor, especially if they labor in the word.*

*If an elder sins, rebuke him in front of all that they may fear.*

*Do these things without prejudice, doing nothing from partiality.*

*Lay hands hastily on no one; don't participate in their sins, keep yourself pure.*

**8.4.1.9 Love commanded**

Love is not a good suggestion. The Lord commands us to love. This means laying our lives down for each other and serving one another.

John 13:31-35; John 15:12-13

*The Father glorified Jesus, and was glorified in Jesus.*

*Jesus gave a new commandment, that we should love one another.*

*Just as we love Jesus, we should love one another.*

*Everyone will know we are disciples of Jesus if we love one another.*

*Greater love has no one than this, that he lay down his life for his friend.*

Galatians 5:13-15

*We are called to freedom, but we should not use it as gain for the flesh, but through love, serve one another.*

*The whole law is fulfilled in loving our neighbor.*

*If we bite and devour one another, we might consume each other.*

Ephesians 5:1-2

*Imitate God, as beloved children; walk in love as Christ loved us and gave Himself up for us.*

Philippians 2:1-4

*We are called to exhort in Christ, console in love, fellowship in the Spirit, and have tender mercies and compassion.*

*We are called to be like-minded, having the same love, being of one accord and one mind.*

*Do nothing in rivalry or conceit, but in humility count others better than yourself.*

*Don't just look to your own things, but also to the things of others.*

1 Thessalonians 4:9-10

*We are taught by God to love one another, and we should abound more and more in it.*

1 John 2:7-11

*If you hate your brother, you are in darkness; if you love others, you walk in the light.*

*He who loves his brother is in the light and has no occasion for stumbling in him.*

*He who hates his brother is in the darkness and walks in the darkness.*

1 John 4:7-21

*Love one another, for everyone who loves is born of God and knows God.*

*God loved us and sent His Son as the atoning sacrifice for our sins.*

*If God loved us in this way, we ought also to love one another.*

*If we love one another God remains in us and His love is perfected in us.*

*We know we remain in Him and He in us because He has given His Spirit.*

*God is love; he who remains in love remains in God and God remains in Him.*

*As Jesus is, so are we in the world; there is no fear in love, perfect love casts out fear.*

*Fear has punishment; he who fears is not made perfect in love.*

*We love Him because He first loved us.*

*If you claim to love God but don't love your brother, you lie.*

*He who doesn't love his brother whom he has seen, cannot love God whom he hasn't seen.*

2 John 1:4-6

*Follow the command which we had from the beginning that we love one another.*

*This is love, that we walk according to the commandments of Jesus.*

#### 8.4.1.10 What it means to love

Not only does the Lord command us to love, but He commands us to love those who hate us. He commands us to be kind to the unthankful and evil. And He commands us to accommodate the needs of the weak.

Matthew 5:43-48; Luke 6:27-36

*Love your enemy, bless those who curse you, do good to those who hate you, and pray for those who mistreat you.*

*Be children of your Father in heaven, who does good to all.*

*Even tax collectors and sinners love those who love them.*

*The Father is kind to the unthankful and evil.*

*Be perfect and merciful as your Father in Heaven is perfect and merciful.*

*If someone strikes you on the cheek, offer the other.*

*As you would like people to do to you, do so to them.*

*Lend expecting nothing back, and your reward will be great, and you will be children of the Most High.*

Luke 10:25-37

*Love the Lord with all your heart and love others as yourself, and you will live.*

*The Samaritan helped the Jew who was attacked by robbers; go and do likewise.*

1 Corinthians 1:8-13

*Knowledge puffs up, but love builds up.*

*If anyone thinks he knows anything, he doesn't yet know as he ought to know.*

*If anyone knows God, he is also known by Him. There is one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and one Lord, Jesus, through whom are all things.*

*Some eat and their conscience being weak is defiled; food does not commend us to God.*

*Do not allow this liberty of yours to become a stumbling block for the weak.*

*If through your knowledge a weak person perishes, you are sinning against your brother.*

*If you sin against your brother, you sin against Christ.*

1 Corinthians 13:1-13

*Spiritual gifts without love are useless.*

*Love is patient, kind, doesn't envy or brag, is not proud, doesn't seek its own, is not provoked.*

*Love bears all, believes all, hopes all and endures all.*

*Love never fails.*

*Prophecy, tongues and knowledge will be done away with.*

*We know and prophecy in part, but when the complete has come, the partial will be done away.*

*Now we know in part, but then we will know fully as we are fully known.*

*Faith, hope and love remain, but the greatest of these is love.*

1 John 3:11-20

*This message we have heard from the beginning, that we should love one another.*

*Cain was evil and killed his brother because his deeds were evil and his brother's were righteous.*

*We have passed out of death and into life because we love the brothers.*

*He who doesn't love His brother remains in death.*

*He who hates his brother is a murderer, and no murderer has eternal life.*

*We know love because Jesus laid down His life for us.*

*We ought to lay down our lives for our brothers.*

*Love not in word or tongue only, but in deed and truth.*

*We know that we are of the truth and persuade our hearts before Him.*

*If our heart condemns us, God is greater than our heart and knows all things.*

3 John 1:1-14

*You will prosper and be healthy even as your soul prospers.*

*Don't imitate what is evil, but what is good; he who does good is of God.*

#### **8.4.1.11 Importance of Church discipline**

There are times when believers need to deal with sin. Paul told the Corinthians that they should be mourning that the person be removed from their midst who had his father's wife. Spiritual parents need to take the initiative when these times arise in the Church, dealing with those who continue to practice sin which separates them from God. Spiritual parents may even need to turn their children over to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that their spirit might be saved in the day of Jesus.

Matthew 18:15-20

*If your brother sins, confront him alone; if he listens and repents, you gain him back.*

*If he doesn't listen to you, take two or more with you.*

*If he doesn't listen to two or more, tell it to the Church.*

*If he doesn't listen to the Church, treat him as an unbeliever.*

*What you bind on earth is bound in heaven; what you loose on earth is loosed in heaven.*

*If two of you agree on earth concerning anything they ask, it will be done by My Father.*

*Where two or three are gathered together in the name of Jesus, there He is in your midst.*

1 Corinthians 5:1-13

*If there is sin which separates from God, mourn that who did it might be removed from you.*

*Deliver the sinner to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit might be saved in the day of Jesus.*

*Have no company with sinners claiming Christianity who practice evil.*

*We do not judge unbelievers, but those in the Church.*

*Put away the wicked man from among yourselves.*

#### 8.4.1.12 Faith modeled by Jesus

Jesus was an example of faith. He expected His disciples to walk in faith and not doubt. Spiritual parents need to do the same for their children and peers.

Matthew 21:17-22; Mark 11:12-14; 11:20-24

*By faith, Jesus cursed a fig tree and it withered away.*

*When His disciples asked about the fig tree, Jesus said to have faith and do not doubt.*

*All things you ask in prayer believing, you will receive.*

Matthew 15:21-28; Mark 9:14-29; Luke 9:37-42

*Jesus rebuked the unbelieving generation for their lack of faith.*

*Jesus told a man to believe; he said he did believe, but asked the Lord to help his unbelief; Jesus helped him.*

*Casting out demons takes faith, and sometimes prayer and fasting.*

#### 8.4.1.13 Parents model discipleship

Spiritual young people need mature Christians to model what it means to be a disciple. It is the job of the spiritual parents in their lives to do this. Spiritual parents need to raise a standard of holiness, righteousness and blamelessness in their behavior toward others.

1 Corinthians 4:14-21

*Paul admonished the Churches as his beloved children, and he and his team provided a good example.*

*Paul became father of the Corinthians through the gospel; he begged them to imitate him.*

*God's kingdom is not in word only, but in power.*

*Do you want a spiritual authority to come to you with a rod, or in love and a spirit of gentleness?*

Philippians 2:19-24

*Timothy served Paul like a child serves a father in the furtherance of the gospel.*

Philippians 3:17

*Be imitators of godly men and note those who walk as they do.*

1 Thessalonians 2:7-16

*Be willing to impart to those you serve not just the word, but your own soul as they become dear to you.*

*Behave yourself as holy, righteous and blameless toward other believers.*

*Exhort, comfort and implore everyone, as a father, so they can walk worthy of God, who calls them into His Kingdom.*

*Accept the Scripture not as the word of men, but the word of God, which works in the lives of believers.*

*Be imitators of godly men and women who provide a good example.*

#### 8.4.1.14 Disciples make disciples

This is the hallmark of a true disciple. If you don't make disciples, you are not a disciple. The Kingdom of God is built on making disciples. There is no plan B. If you make disciples, Jesus will be with you to the end of the age. Spiritual parents need to coordinate and oversee the activities of the Church and insure that people become disciple makers and not just converts. This is the mission and call of the Church.

Matthew 28:16-20; Mark 16:15-20

*All authority has been given to Jesus in heaven and on earth.*

*Having gone, therefore, make disciples of all nations.*

*Baptize disciples in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.*

*Teach disciples to observe all Jesus commanded us.*

*Jesus promised to be with disciple-making disciples even to the end of the age.*

Acts 14:21-28

*Paul and Barnabas preached the Gospel and made many disciples.*

*They appointed elders, prayed, fasted and commended them to the Lord.*

*God opened a door of faith to the nations for Paul and Barnabas.*

#### 8.4.1.15 Walk harmlessly

As spiritual parents, you are to do no harm. In the context of the Church, you are to be gentle with those who are weak. You are responsible to do nothing to make your brothers stumble. You don't live to yourself or die to yourself, but you live and die to the Lord. Therefore, you should walk in a way which seeks the profit of many.

Mark 9:42-49

*Jesus said whoever causes a little one to stumble would be better off cast into the sea with a millstone hung around his neck.*

*It is better to enter life lame or maimed than to be whole and cast into unquenchable fire.*

Romans 14:1-26

*Accept one who is weak in faith and do not dispute over opinions.*

*Some have faith to eat all things, but the weak in faith eat only vegetables.*

*No one lives to himself, no one dies to himself; we live and die to the Lord.*

*Whether we live or die, we are the Lord's.*

*To the Lord every knee will bow, and every tongue will confess to God.*

*Don't destroy with your food him for whom Christ died and don't let your good be slandered.*

*Follow after peace and the things by which we may build one another up.*

*It is good not to do anything by which your brother stumbles, is offended or is made weak.*

*One who partakes doubting is condemned, because whatever is not of faith is sin.*

*God is able to establish you according to the gospel and preaching of Christ.*

*God made the gospel known for obedience of faith to all the nations.*

1 Corinthians 10:14-33

*Let no one seek his own, but each his neighbor's good.*

*Give no occasion for stumbling, whether to Jews, Greeks or the Church.*

*Please (accommodate) all men in all things, seeking the profit of the many that they may be saved.*

#### 8.4.1.16 Jesus modeled strength

Jesus was an example of strength. When the Jews had defiled the temple of God, the house of prayer, by turning it into a den of robbers, Jesus dealt with the situation. In the same way, spiritual parents need to model strength for the young in their midst.

Matthew 21:12-14; Mark 11:15-19; John 2:12-25

*Jesus made a whip of cords and threw out of the temple the changers of money and those who sold oxen, sheep and doves.*

*He did this because they made God's house a den of thieves instead of a house of prayer.*

*The chief priests and scribes sought how they might kill Him.*

*The Jews feared Him, because the multitude was astonished at His teaching.*

*The blind and lame came to Him in the temple, and He healed them.*

#### 8.4.1.17 Disciples provide for others

As a spiritual parent, it is your responsibility to provide for your children. You will need to seek Jesus and do what He says if you are to be successful. Your job as a spiritual parent is to have compassion on the sick and weak.

Matthew 14:14-21; 15:29-39; Mark 6:33-44; 8:1-10; Luke 9:11-17; John 6:1-15

*Jesus had compassion on the multitude and healed their sick.*

*Jesus told His disciples to feed a multitude of people three times; Jesus multiplied food and fed them.*

Matthew 14:34-36; Mark 6:53-56; 8:22-26

*People brought to Jesus their sick and begged Him to heal them; He did.*

Matthew 20:1-16

*Those who come first will bear the heat and labor of the day; the first will be last and the last first.*

*Many are called but few are chosen.*

Mark 9:38-41

*Jesus told His disciples not to stop people from doing miracles in His name.*

#### 8.4.1.18 Reach all the world

God's vision for the world is that His disciples will build the Church, branching from where they are out to the whole world. But disciples must start where they are. God wants the entire world to come to Him. He wants to pour His Spirit on all flesh.

Acts 1:8; 8:1-40

*Jesus told the disciples that they would build the Church from Jerusalem, to Judea, Samaria, and the uttermost parts of the world.*

*After Stephen was martyred, the disciples, except for the apostles, were scattered throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria.*

*Those who were scattered abroad went around preaching the word, doing miracles, and building God's kingdom.*

Acts 17:1-34; 20:1-6; 20:17-38

*The Bereans received the word with all readiness of mind and examined the Scriptures daily.*

*The disciples did not shrink from declaring to people, teaching them publicly and from house to house.*

*The disciples testified of repentance toward God and faith toward Jesus throughout the known world.*

**8.4.1.19 Bring the Kingdom of God**

Wherever you go as spiritual parents, you need to bring the Kingdom of God. This is the never ending increase of Christ's government in the earth. Your job is to oversee this work in the lives of those God has given you, and raise them up so they can oversee it in the lives of people God gives them. If you are faithful to the end, God's Kingdom, where Christ is Lord, will never stop increasing.

Matthew 13:31-32

*The Kingdom of Heaven is small like a mustard seed, but it becomes a tree when it is grown.*

Matthew 13:33; Luke 13:18-22

*The Kingdom of Heaven is like yeast which leavens bread.*

Matthew 13:44-50

*The Kingdom of Heaven is like a treasure which a person sells everything to gain.*

*The Kingdom of Heaven is like a dragnet where the good are kept and the bad are thrown into the furnace.*

*Angels will separate the good from the evil and cast the evil into the furnace; there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.*

Matthew 19:13-15; Mark 10:13-16

*The Kingdom of Heaven belongs to people who are like little children.*

*Anyone who does not receive God's Kingdom like a little child will not enter into it.*

Mark 4:26-29

*The Kingdom of Heaven is like a seed which grows, even though you don't know how.*

Luke 8:1-3

*Jesus preached the Gospel of the Kingdom of God.*

Revelation 4:1-22:21

*There will be no end to the increase of Christ's government.*

**8.5 What to do with spiritual parents**

- Release them and support them
- Make them co-laborers with you in the call and work to make disciples and oversee the dream of God for the Church



# Index

- 2 Tim 2:2 principle, 14
- 7\*70 times, 98
  
- abhor, 106
- abortion, 9
- abound, 90, 116, 119, 120, 130
- above, 116, 120
- above all, 105
- above all rule, 118
- above reproach, 55
- Abraham, 99, 108, 115
- abstain, 60
- abstain from evil, 117
- abuse, 57
- Accept, 127
- accept, 133
- acceptable, 115
- acceptable time, 110
- acceptably, 90
- acceptance, 46, 55, 69
- accepted, 40
- access, 90
- access by faith into grace, 101
- accommodate modern values, 67
- accomplished, 125, 127
- according, 89, 109
- account, 115
- accountability, 66
- accountable, 63
- accounted, 99
- accurate, 67
- accurately, 126
- accuser, 112
- Achaia, 94
- Acknowledge, 94
- action, 93
- active, 108
- activities, 68
- Acts, 126
- added, 81
- addicted, 57
- addictive, 57
- administer, 57
- admit, 60
- admonish, 83, 126, 132
  
- adopted, 50, 90, 116
- adulation, 56
- adult, 82
- adultery, 100
- adults, 43
- adversaries, 105
- affairs, 120
- affirmation, 55
- afflictions, 114
- against, 92
- agnosticism, 74
- agree, 132
- alcohol, 57
- Alexander, 113, 114
- alienated, 92
- alive, 77, 90, 92, 129
- alive to God, 91
- all authority, 133
- all joy, 101
- all men, 112
- all ministers, 21
- all nations, 105, 112
- all power, 103
- All things, 132
- all things are yours, 119
- all things created for and by Jesus, 87
- All things delivered, 87
- all things held together, 87
- all truth, 86
- all your heart, 130
- allow Him full access, 45
- Almighty, 88
- Alpha, 88
- Alpha and Omega, 17
- ambassadors, 80, 97
- Ananias, 95
- ancients, 100
- Andrew, 94
- angel, 113
- Angels, 105, 135
- angels, 87, 112
- anger, 74, 92
- angry, 100
- Anna, 109
- anointed, 86, 99

- anointing, 14, 91  
 answer, 83, 105  
 answer questions, 9  
 anxious, 112, 113, 116  
 apostles, 90, 101, 103, 105, 109, 122, 134  
 apostleship, 89  
 appears, 91  
 application, 68  
 apply, 68  
 appointed, 77, 113  
 appointed elders, 133  
 approved, 78, 106, 126  
 argue, 126  
 argumentative, 58  
 arguments, 121, 126  
 arm yourself, 115  
 arrayed, 114  
 arrogant, 51, 60, 120  
 ashamed, 83, 91  
 Ask, 113  
 ask, 110, 113, 117, 120, 132  
 ask anything, 93  
 ask what we desire, 110  
 assembly, 81  
 associate, 83  
 assurance, 108  
 assured, 99  
 astonished, 134  
 astray, 112  
 astrology, 74  
 at peace with all, 56  
 atheism, 74  
 athlete, 120  
 atonement, 88  
 atoning sacrifice, 93, 130  
 attacks, 57  
 attendance, 19  
 attitude, 45  
 attracted, 56  
 attracts, 61  
 authentic, 65  
 authenticity, 66  
 author, 110  
 authoritarian, 58  
 authorities, 96  
 authority, 10, 59, 77, 106, 114, 118, 125  
 authority over all flesh, 127  
 avoid unholy behavior, 60  
 awe, 90
- babes, 81  
 babies, 82  
     meet every need, 69  
 babies fed, 47  
 bad, 115  
 bad thrown into the furnace, 135  
 balance, 56  
 balanced, 56  
 baptisms, 82  
 baptize, 9, 10  
 baptize disciples, 133  
 baptized, 78, 91, 94, 95, 107, 115, 122  
 baptized into Christ, 116  
 Barnabas, 100, 113, 126, 133  
*Barnabas*, 113  
 basic message, 68  
 basin, 128  
 be careful, 95  
 be gentle, 126  
 be healthy, 131  
 be ready, 88  
 be wronged, 118  
 Bear, 128  
 bear cross, 97  
 bear fruit, 7, 103, 110  
 bear much fruit, 110  
 bearing, 107  
 bears all, 131  
 bears fruit, 110  
 beat your body, 110  
 beaten, 119  
 became fools, 78  
 became vain, 78  
 become new, 80, 97  
 Beelzebub, 113  
 before, 108  
 before all, 87  
 beforehand, 112  
 begged, 132  
 begged Him, 134  
 beginning, 17, 82, 93, 130, 131  
 begun, 115  
 Behave, 133  
 behavior, 46, 93  
 being glorified, 44  
 belief, 82  
 believe, 78, 80, 97, 99, 101, 105, 108, 117, 121, 122, 132  
 believe the light, 127  
 believed, 99, 113, 115  
 believed on, 87  
 believer, 7  
 believers, 118, 133  
 believes, 78, 81, 101, 127  
 believes all, 131  
 bellies, 118  
 belong to Christ, 116  
 belong to the day, 60, 98  
 beloved, 90  
 beloved children, 132  
 bend, 58  
 Beroeans, 134  
 best gifts, 107  
 Bethlehem, 114

- better covenant, 89
- bible study, 67
- Bible translation, 67
- Biblical principles, 59
- bind, 81, 132
- birth, 114, 122
- bishop, 128
- bishops, 55
- bite, 129
- bitterness, 92
- blameless, 41, 53, 59, 92, 93, 95, 98, 121, 128, 133
- blameless as a steward, 59
- bless, 83, 130
- Blessed, 101
- blessed, 7, 90, 95, 110, 115
- blind, 134
- blood, 87, 89, 90, 98, 101, 110, 111
- blood drink indeed, 111
- blood of Jesus, 90
- boast, 97, 106, 122
- boast in appearance, 80, 97
- boat, 80, 96
- bodies, 106, 115
- body, 92, 93, 107, 115
- body food indeed, 111
- body of Christ, 106, 107
- body of death, 92
- body of His flesh, 92
- body of sin, 91
- boldly, 125
- boldness, 91, 115
- bond of peace, 107
- bond of perfection, 93
- bond-servant, 118
- bond-servants, 7
- bondage to sin, 91
- book of life, 114
- born, 130
- born again, 9, 38, 69, 81, 93
- born of God, 87, 93
- born of Him, 91
- born of the Spirit, 81
- born of water, 81
- born of women, 95
- bound, 81, 132
- bound all to disobedience, 89
- bow, 17, 128
- branch, 110
- bread, 83, 119
- bread of life, 111
- breaking of bread, 81
- bride, 53
- bridle, 127
- broken relationships, 55
- brother, 77, 83, 131
- brother stumbles, 133
- brotherly affection, 98
- brothers, 118
- build, 13, 81, 134
- build each other up, 107
- build up, 106, 127
- build up others, 133
- building fund, 19
- building the kingdom of God, 134
- building up, 107
- buildings, 7
  - not needed to make disciples, 7
- built, 81
- built all things, 88
- built up, 90
- burden, 46
- burdens, 128
- burned, 82, 111
- business, 56, 110, 118
- busybodies, 83
- Cain, 131
- call, 101, 107
- call on the Lord, 126
- call on the name of Jesus, 90
- called, 7, 51, 92, 108, 109, 118, 134
- called you, 117
- calling, 9, 98, 103
- callings, 89
- callous, 92
- calls, 99, 109, 133
- came from God, 128
- captivity, 92
- care, 46
- cares of the world, 109
- caring, 19
- carnal, 40
- carnal nature, 44
- carry load, 128
- cast, 133
- cast out demons, 77, 132
- cast worries, 94
- casting out demons, 117
- catch men, 95
- caught up in the air, 90
- cause harm, 61
- causes, 21
- ceased from sin, 115
- changers, 134
- changing the world, 8
- character assassination, 115
- character of God, 8
- charitable giving, 119
- cheek, 130
- chief priests, 134
- Chief Shepherd, 128
- child, 132
- children, 59, 90, 92, 95, 115, 116, 130
- children are self-centered, 40

- children need adults, 40
- children need patience, 40
- children of day, 98
- children of disobedience, 90, 93, 95
- children of God, 92, 95, 101
- children of light, 98, 116
- children of wrath, 90
- choke, 109
- chose, 40, 90, 110
- chosen, 82, 89, 134
- chosen ones, 89
- chosen race, 117
- chosen vessel, 95
- Christ, 81, 82, 118, 122, 131
- Christ died for us, 101
- Christ lives in us, 99
- Christ our life, 116
- Christ the Lord, 100
- Christian, 7
- Church, 81, 118, 132, 134
- church
  - forgiving culture, 65
- Church leaders not zealous, 21
- church structure, 19
- Church success, 7
- Churches, 113, 114, 132
- churches, 129
- circumcised, 92, 100
- circumcision, 100
- circumstances, 61
- City of David, 100
- clean the life of a person, 45
- cleanse, 42, 81, 98
- cleanse from all unrighteousness, 60
- cleanse the soul, 45
- cleanses, 98
- cleansing, 98, 100
- cloud, 95
- collateral, 89
- Colossians, 129
- colt, 95
- come short, 108
- come to Father, 127
- come to Jesus, 109
- comes, 104, 127
- comes to Jesus, 95
- comfort, 82, 114, 133
- comfort others, 114
- comforted, 101
- comforts, 114
- coming, 88
- Command, 125, 126
- command, 121, 130
- commanded, 99, 133
- commandments, 93, 110, 117, 130
- commend, 80, 97, 110
- commend self, 106
- commends, 101
- commit, 120
- commitment, 78
- committed, 121
- committed follower of Jesus, 19
- compassion, 19, 77, 109, 114, 121, 129, 134
- compassionate, 83
- compete, 120
- competition, 58
- complete, 115–117, 129, 131
- complete healing, 46
- complete transformation, 21
- comprehend, 120
- compromise, 24, 58
- conceit, 129
- conceited, 116, 126
- conceits, 83
- conceive, 101
- condemn, 119
- condemnation, 92
- condemned, 92, 133
- condemns, 131
- condition, 118
- conduct, 110
- confess, 7, 17, 42, 60, 98, 101, 114, 125, 128, 133
- confess Jesus, 112
- confession, 46, 91, 101
- confidence, 67, 108
- confidence in the flesh, 100
- confident, 96
- confirm the promises, 101
- confirm your heart in grace*, 117
- confirmed, 96
- conformed, 115
- confront, 132
- confusion, 74, 107
- connect, 69
- conscience, 131
- consecration, 25
- consolation, 107
- console, 129
- consume, 129
- consuming fire, 90
- content, 117, 118, 120
- contentious, 96
- contentment, 58
- contrite, 59
- control, 59, 61
- control my appetites, 57
- control my body, 57
- control my emotions, 57
- control my mind, 57
- control my will, 57
- controlling, 60
- conviction, 42
- coppersmith, 114
- CORDS, 134

- core teachings, 68  
 core truths, 68  
 Corinthians, 81, 122, 132  
 cornerstone, 90  
 correct, 39, 57, 106, 125, 126  
 corrected, 80, 96  
 correction, 66, 119  
 corrupt minds, 126  
 corruptible, 93  
 corruptible crown, 110  
 corruption, 98, 128  
 cost, 9  
 counsel, 60  
 Counselor, 93  
 count the cost, 25, 97  
 courageous, 120  
 courteous, 59  
 courtyard, 112  
 covers, 107  
 covet, 58  
 covetous person, 95  
 covetousness, 93, 95  
 CRAB method, 42  
 criticism, 56  
 criticizes, 57  
 crop, 120  
 cross, 24, 92, 97, 128  
 cross of Jesus, 113  
 crowd, 111  
 crown of glory, 128  
 crowned, 120  
 crucified, 91, 97, 122  
 crucified the flesh, 116  
 crucified with Christ, 99  
 crucifixion, 111  
 crush, 118  
 cry out to God, 38  
 culture of honor, 49  
 culture of trust, 65  
 cure, 114  
 curse, 116, 130  
 cursed, 82, 132  
 custodian, 57  
 cut it down, 78
- daily, 108  
 daily bread, 52, 104  
 darkness, 98, 103, 116, 117, 130  
 day, 134  
 day of Christ, 116  
 day of salvation, 110  
 deacon, 128  
 deacons, 55  
*deacons*, 115  
 dead, 77, 90–92, 99, 113, 115  
 dead to sin, 91  
 deadly poison, 127
- dear, 133  
 death, 81, 88, 91–93, 128, 131  
 debriefed, 66  
 deceit, 82  
 deceitfulness, 108, 109  
 deceitfulness of sin, 66  
 deceive, 118, 121  
 deceived, 93  
 deceivers, 125  
 deceives, 128  
 deception, 121, 126  
 decision making, 56  
 declaring, 134  
 decrease, 105  
 deed, 131  
 deeds, 114, 131  
 deeds of the flesh, 116  
 deep hurt, 45  
 deep-seated resentment, 45  
 deepest commitment, 16  
 defame, 58  
 defect, 59, 95  
 defiled, 131  
 defilement, 81  
 defiles, 100  
 defrauded, 118  
 deliver, 46, 86, 92  
 deliver to Satan, 132  
 deliver you, 113  
 deliverance from evil, 52  
 delivered, 82, 99, 103, 104, 112, 114  
 delivered from evil, 52  
 deliverer, 18  
 delivers, 78  
 demoniac, 121  
 demonstrated, 122  
 denial of self, 24  
 denied, 112, 129  
 deny, 121  
 deny Jesus, 112  
 deny ungodliness, 90  
 deny yourself, 97  
 depart, 82, 95, 128  
 dependence, 53  
 depraved passion, 93  
 depth, 19  
 descendant of David, 88  
 desire, 90, 91, 103, 107  
 desired, 107  
 desires, 97, 107  
 despise, 117  
 destitute, 126  
 destroy, 89, 93  
 destruction of the flesh, 132  
 destructive, 67  
 determined, 122  
 devil, 88, 93, 112

- devour, 129
- devout, 60
- diablo, 112
- did them, 78
- die, 112, 121
- die is gain, 105
- die to the law, 99
- die to the Lord, 133
- died, 80, 91, 97, 116, 129, 133
- died to sin, 91
- died with Christ, 91
- dies, 91, 133
- different, 83
- different doctrine, 126
- difficult, 9
- dignity, 49
- diligence, 98
- Diligent, 126
- diligent, 59, 98
- diligent at work, 60
- diligent worker, 58
- direct, 47
- direction, 94
- disappoint, 101
- discern, 56, 107, 108
- disciple, 7, 112
- disciple group, 13
- Disciples, 112, 125
- disciples, 66, 77, 80, 81, 96–98, 104, 105, 109–111, 113, 128, 129, 132, 134
  - committed, 7
  - die for Jesus, 9
  - diligent, 9
  - faithful, 9
  - life-long, 7
  - listen to Jesus, 9
  - love Jesus, 9
  - maturity, 35
  - mission of Jesus, 9
  - no plan B, 9
  - not deny Jesus, 9
  - not follow us, 10
  - obey Jesus, 9
  - seek Jesus, 9
  - sent, 33
  - serve God together, 10
  - serve Jesus, 9
  - suffer persecution, 9
  - work to exhaustion, 9
- disciples knew, 127
- disciples of Jesus, 10, 71
- discipleship
  - one on one, 14
  - small groups, 14
- discipline, 47
- disciplined life, 60
- disease, 121
- dishonest gain, 58
- disiples
  - follow Jesus, 9
- disobedience, 95, 99, 108
- disobedient, 93
- dispute, 133
- disputes, 125, 126
- disqualified, 106, 110
- disregard, 97
- dissipation, 116
- distribute, 120
- distributed, 118
- distributing, 107
- divided, 118
- dividing, 108
- divine nature, 98
- divine power, 98
- divisions, 118
- divisive, 58
- do as He did, 128
- do good, 83, 130
- do no evil, 106
- do not be afraid, 120
- do not curse, 83
- do not doubt, 132
- do not fret, 46
- do not give up, 104
- do not judge, 45
- do not make excuses, 45
- Do not quarrel, 126
- do so to others, 130
- do those things*, 98
- do what you see the Father doing, 53
- do will of God, 7
- doctrinal truths, 67
- doctrine, 111, 118, 126
- doctrine of Christ, 125
- doctrines of demons, 125
- doers, 96
- doers of the word, 68
- does, 95
- does good, 130
- does miracles, 115
- does not, 95
- does not brag, 131
- does not envy, 131
- does not remain, 125
- dogs, 119
- doing good, 128
- doing miracles, 134
- dominate, 59
- domineering, 60
- dominion, 91, 118
- done away, 91, 131
- done for us, 110
- donkey, 88, 95
- door, 89

- door of faith, 133  
 double honor, 129  
 doubt, 105  
 doubting, 104  
 dove, 86  
 doves, 134  
 down payment, 115  
 dragged, 113  
 dragnet, 135  
 draw all men, 127  
 draw conclusions, 68  
 draw near, 91  
 dream of God, 8, 47, 52  
 dreams, 94  
 drew lots, 109  
 dried, 128  
 drink, 77, 107  
 drinker, 57  
 drinking, 91  
 driven by desires, 57  
 dross, 45  
 drugs, 57  
 drying, 99  
 dwell, 120  
 dwells, 92  
 dying to self, 53  
  
 eager, 107  
 early church, 7  
     overcoming, 14  
     thriving, 14  
 earnest, 107  
 earnestly desire, 107  
 earth, 88, 104, 116, 128, 132, 133  
 earthly possessions, 57  
 easily angered, 57  
 Eat, 77  
 eat, 114, 133  
 eating, 91  
 eats, 111  
 edification, 107  
 education, 59  
 elder, 128  
 Elders, 129  
 elders, 55  
 election, 98  
 elements, 91  
 Elijah, 111  
 Elizabeth, 108  
 emotional abuse, 57  
 employ, 107  
 empower, 21  
   *empower*, 104  
 empower everyone, 14  
 emptied Himself, 128  
 emulate the Father, 53  
   *enable*, 104  
   enabled, 107  
   enables, 43  
   enabling, 14, 42  
   encourage, 47, 57  
   encouraged, 82  
   encouragement, 55, 66  
   encourager, 57  
   encouraging, 63  
   end, 108  
   end of the age, 133  
   endless life, 89  
   endure, 121  
   endure hardship, 120  
   endure it, 95  
   endured, 108, 110  
   endures, 112  
   endures all, 131  
   enemies, 92, 101  
   enemy, 83, 130  
   enlightened, 118  
   enriched, 90, 119  
   entangled, 116  
   entangles, 110  
   entangling, 120  
   entrust, 96  
   envy, 82  
   envying, 116  
   Epaphras, 129  
   Ephesus, 114, 125  
   equality, 19  
   error, 98, 126  
   errors, 67  
   Esau, 109  
   establish, 82, 112, 133  
   established in faith, 90  
   esteem, 60  
   eternal judgment, 82  
   eternal life, 17, 50, 81, 89, 91, 93, 111, 113, 121, 127, 128, 131  
   eternal purpose of God, 26  
   eternal redemption, 89  
   even-tempered, 56  
   every joint supplies, 14, 107  
   every knee, 128  
   every other name, 118  
   everyone a minister, 14  
   evil, 56, 67, 81, 83, 96, 103, 106, 114, 121, 130, 131, 135  
   evil behavior, 93  
   evil deeds, 92  
   evil desire, 93  
   evil generation, 52  
   evil heart, 108  
   evil one, 52, 82, 93, 104  
   evil servant, 98  
   evil speaking, 82  
   evil work, 114

- evil world, 52  
 Ex 20:19 syndrome, 21  
 exalt selves, 59  
 exalted, 128  
 Examine yourself, 106  
 examined the Scriptures, 134  
 example, 125, 127, 128  
 examples, 95, 108  
 excellence, 117, 122  
 excess, 57  
 exercise oversight, 128  
 Exhort, 108, 133  
 exhort, 128, 129  
 exhortation, 107  
 exhorted, 107  
 exists, 108  
 expect hardship, 32  
 experience, 68  
 exposed, 81  
 externals, 66  
 extremes, 56  
 eye-witnesses, 105  
 eyes of the Lord, 83
- face against evil, 83  
 face persecution, 7  
 facilitate, 13  
 factious man, 125  
 failed, 108  
 fair, 60  
 Faith, 108  
 faith, 78, 82, 90, 92, 93, 96, 98, 99, 104–106, 108, 110, 116, 120–122, 125, 126, 131–134  
 faith in Jesus, 99  
 faith working through love, 116  
 faithful, 90, 98, 120, 121  
 faithful Creator, 96  
 faithful word, 57, 128  
 faithless, 121  
 fall, 95  
 false gospel, 106  
 false prophets, 113  
 false teachers, 100  
 fame, 74  
 family, 59, 80, 96, 112  
 farmer, 109, 120  
 fast, 7, 38  
 fasted, 133  
 fasting, 132  
 Father, 77, 90, 91, 93, 98, 108, 110–115, 122, 129, 130  
 father, 46, 99, 132, 133  
 Father gave Jesus work, 127  
 Father in heaven, 81, 130  
 Father in Jesus, 104  
 Father sent Jesus, 127  
 Father's beloved son, 87  
 Father, in Jesus, 127
- fathers, 101  
 fathers and mothers, 82  
 fault, 128  
 favor, 90  
 fear, 81, 83, 95, 108  
 fear of the Lord, 80, 97  
 fear, of God, 108  
 feared, 134  
 fed them, 134  
 feed, 134  
 feed His sheep, 109  
 feedback, 13  
 feeding the poor, 9  
 feet, 77, 80, 96, 99, 128  
 fell, 89  
 fellow workers, 69  
 fellowship, 65, 81, 90, 98, 116, 129  
 fig tree, 78, 88, 132  
 fight, 121  
 fight injustice, 9  
 fighting the enemy, 69  
 filled, 101, 107, 109, 115, 116, 120  
 filled with Holy Spirit, 113  
 filled with joy, 113  
 filthiness, 95, 96  
 finances, 58, 59  
 find it, 97, 112  
 find rest, 7  
 firm, 108  
 firm foundation, 82  
 first, 80, 96, 130  
 first century church, 8  
 first defense, 114  
 first principles, 82  
 first share, 120  
 firstborn of creation, 87  
 fishers of men, 31  
 fit, 103  
 fitted, 107  
 fitted together, 90  
 flat, 97  
 flattering speech, 118  
 flee youthful lusts, 126  
 flesh, 81, 91, 92, 97, 111, 115, 116, 128, 129  
 flesh and blood, 81  
 flesh profits nothing, 111  
 fleshly, 81, 91  
 fleshly boasting, 118  
 fleshly commandments, 89  
 flirtatious, 55  
 focus, 20  
 follow, 7, 80, 96  
 follow Him, 89, 97, 109, 112  
 follow Jesus, 7  
 followed, 121  
 followed Him, 80, 94, 96  
 followers, 80, 97



- followers of Jesus, 7  
 food, 111, 133  
 food does not commend, 131  
 fool, 100, 119  
 foolish, 93, 95, 109  
 foolish questions, 125  
 foolish talking, 95  
 foolish things, 118  
 foolishness, 119  
 for us, 92  
 forbearance, 58  
 forgave, 92, 98, 99  
 forgive, 42, 46, 60, 98, 104  
 forgiven, 55, 92, 99, 104  
 forgiveness, 40, 65, 90  
 forgiveness of debts, 52  
 forgiveness of sins, 103  
 forgiving, 92  
 forgiving others, 52  
 form of God, 128  
 former, 92  
 fornication, 93, 95  
 fornicator, 95  
 forsake sin, 24  
 fought, 112  
 found, 77  
 foundation, 39, 46, 81, 88, 90  
 foundational truths, 57  
 foundations, 82  
 framed, 108  
 free, 45, 92, 113, 118  
 free from sin, 91  
 free gift, 91  
 freed, 91  
 freedom, 57, 129  
 freely, 90  
 friends, 110  
 friendship, 74, 78  
 frightened, 105  
 from heaven, 105  
 from the beginning, 87  
 front of all, 129  
 fruit, 78, 82, 91, 109, 110, 116  
 fruit remain, 110  
 fruitful, 43, 68  
 frustration, 79  
 fulfill, 128  
 fulfilled, 129  
 fulfillment, 99  
 full assurance, 90  
 full grown man, 107  
 full of faith, 115  
 full of good fruits, 127  
 full of mercy, 127  
 full of the Holy Spirit, 115  
*full of the Spirit*, 115  
 fullness, 118, 120  
 fullness of Christ, 107  
 fullness of God, 87  
 fullness of the deity, 87  
 function, 106  
 furnace, 135  
  
 Gadarene, 121  
 gain, 110, 129  
 Galatians, 106  
 games, 110  
 gates of Hell, 81  
 gathered together, 132  
 gave, 129  
 gave Himself, 92  
 Gehenna, 100  
 generation, 111  
 generosity, 119  
 Gentiles, 100, 116, 122, 126  
 gentle, 57, 58, 69, 101, 127  
 gentleness, 65, 116, 121  
 gentleness of wisdom, 127  
 gently, 38, 55, 59  
 gift, 107  
 gift of God, 90  
 gift of righteousness, 101  
 gifts, 89, 106, 107, 110  
 gifts of the Holy Spirit, 96  
 give, 7, 113, 119  
*give*  
     *cheerfully*, 119  
     freely, 119  
     not grudgingly or under compulsion, 119  
 give diligence, 108  
 give freely, 28  
 give money, 9  
 give to the poor, 80, 96  
 given, 107, 110  
 given to Jesus, 133  
 giver, 58  
 giving, 53  
 giving of thanks, 104  
 glorified, 51, 103, 110, 129  
 glorify, 78, 94  
 Glory, 116  
 glory, 40, 49, 53, 88, 90, 127, 128  
*glory*, 104  
 gnashing, 135  
 goal, 110  
 God, 99, 109, 133  
     authority, 56  
     grace, 56  
     hand, 94  
     righteousness, 78  
 God is love, 130  
 God my provider, 58  
 God not mocked, 128  
 God of hope, 101

- God of peace, 107, 118  
 God sent Son, 116  
 God tests our hearts, 126  
 God's Son, 88  
 God-centeredness, 43  
 godliness, 98, 121, 126  
 godly men, 82, 116, 132, 133  
 godly righteous person, 55  
 godly women, 133  
 gone out, 125  
 good, 60, 74, 83, 89, 98, 106, 115, 117, 127, 131, 135  
 good and evil, 82  
 good character, 128  
 good conduct, 127  
 good conscience, 83, 121, 126  
 good example, 83, 125, 132, 133  
 good examples, 128  
 good fight, 121  
 good for nothing, 94  
 good judgment, 56  
 good kept, 135  
 good news, 108  
 good of our neighbor, 134  
 good part, 80, 96  
 good pleasure, 40, 90  
 good report, 56  
*good report*, 115  
 good reputation, 55, 128  
 Good Shepherd, 89  
 good soil, 109  
 good soldier, 120  
 good standing, 128  
 good testimony, 55, 128  
 good work, 82, 96, 103, 116, 117  
 good works, 18, 94, 120, 127  
 goodness, 103, 116  
 gospel, 106, 112, 132, 133  
 gospel of Christ, 78  
 gospel of our salvation, 40  
 gospel of the Kingdom, 78  
 gospel of the Kingdom of God, 135  
 gossip, 58  
 government of Christ, 135  
 governor, 89  
 grace, 19, 39, 42, 56, 88–91, 93, 94, 99–101, 103, 106, 107, 119, 120, 122  
 grace of God, 90, 107, 110  
 gracious, 82  
 great boldness, 128  
 Great Commandment, 12  
 Great Commission, 12, 33  
 great company, 108  
 great grace, 115  
 great zeal, 129  
 greater, 117  
 greatest, 95, 131  
 greediness, 92  
 greedy, 58  
 Greeks, 134  
 grew, 82, 125  
 grief, 45  
 grieve, 92  
 grieved, 42, 98  
 groaning, 92  
 grounded, 92, 120  
 grow, 8, 9, 14, 68, 69, 81, 82  
 grow in grace, 98  
 grow up, 107  
 grows, 91, 135  
 growth, 19, 91  
 growth in churches, 7  
 growth of body, 12  
 grumble, 114  
 guard, 121  
 guidance, 40  
 guide, 39, 47, 86  
 guide unbelievers to Jesus, 9  
  
 habitation, 90  
 habits, 24  
 hair, 99  
 hands, 45, 92  
 handwriting, 92  
 hardened, 89, 108  
 harmed, 114  
 harmless, 59, 95  
 harmless as doves, 113  
 harsh, 20  
 harshly, 66  
 hate, 91, 130  
 hated, 111–113  
 hates, 81, 130, 131  
 have faith, 132  
 He cares, 94  
 He knows, 89  
 He will give it, 110  
 Head, 107  
 head of all power, 87  
 head of all principality, 87  
 heal, 77, 86, 134  
 healed, 101, 121, 122, 134  
 healing, 45  
 health, 45  
 healthy, 78  
 hear, 89, 125  
 hear the word and do it, 95  
 heard, 80, 90, 96, 110, 121  
 heard from God, 105  
 hearers, 96  
 hearers only, 68  
 hearing, 105  
 hearing of faith, 115  
 hears His words, 95  
 heart, 80, 82, 83, 97, 100, 108, 131

- heart darkened, 78  
 heart of a servant, 58  
 heartbeat, 48  
 hearts, 101, 111, 118  
 heat, 134  
 heaven, 78, 80, 95, 96, 104, 111, 114, 128, 132, 133  
 heavenly places, 90  
 heavenly wisdom, 59  
 heavens, 88, 126  
 heir, 88  
 heirs, 92, 99  
 heirs of God, 50  
 hell fire, 100  
 help, 132  
 help in time of need, 60  
 helter-skelter, 61  
 Herod, 113  
 hidden manna, 114  
 high calling, 110  
 High Priest, 88, 89, 91, 112  
 high things, 83  
 highest place, 51  
 highly, 106  
 Him, 93, 96  
 His body, 118  
 His name, 122  
 His seed, 93  
 hold, 47, 117  
 hold everything loosely, 58  
 hold what you accomplished, 125  
 holding up the word, 59  
 holiday, 91  
 holiness, 92  
 holy, 59, 60, 90–93, 115, 119, 133  
 holy men, 105  
 holy nation, 117  
 Holy One, 91  
 Holy Place, 89  
 holy priesthood, 117  
 Holy Scripture, 67  
 Holy Spirit, 78, 86, 100, 110, 113, 115  
 holy temple, 90  
 home, 59  
 honest piety, 60  
 honesty, 55  
 honor, 49, 50, 94, 104, 106, 116  
*honor*, 104  
 honor God, 60  
 honorable, 56, 61, 83, 98  
 hope, 93, 99, 101, 108, 131  
 hope in you, 83  
 hope of His calling, 118  
 hope of the gospel, 92  
 hopes, 120  
 hopes all, 131  
 hospitable, 56  
 hostile, 92  
 hour of His return, 88  
 house, 134  
 house on a rock, 95  
 house to house, 77, 134  
 household, 90, 96, 113, 122, 129  
 household of Stephanas, 94  
 houses, 80, 96  
 human wisdom, 122  
 humble, 57, 59, 83, 94  
 humbled, 128  
 humility, 56, 83, 91, 94, 96, 107, 129  
 hundred, 109  
 hundred times, 80, 96  
 hunger, 101  
 hungry, 120  
 hurt, 45, 55  
 husband, 94  
 hypocrisy, 82, 106  
 hypocrites, 104, 119  
  
 I AM, 87  
 identity, 81  
 idolatry, 20, 93  
 idols, 78  
 ignorance, 39, 74, 79  
 ignorant, 22  
 ignore, 45  
 ignored, 36  
 image, 88  
 image of God, 87  
 image of Jesus, 93  
 imaginations, 106  
 imitate, 8, 83, 117, 131–133  
 imitators, 82, 132  
 immature, 59  
 impart, 133  
 impartial, 60  
 impeccable character, 46, 64  
 implanted word, 96  
 implore, 133  
 impossible, 108  
 impression, 97  
 improper behavior, 57  
 in Christ, 80, 97  
 in darkness, 130  
 in Him, 93  
 in Jesus, 128  
 in season, 125  
 income, 19  
 incorruptibility, 127  
 incorruptible, 93, 110  
 increase, 81, 99, 103, 105, 135  
 indulgence of the flesh, 91  
 inherit, 96  
 inherit a blessing, 83  
 inherit eternal life, 80, 96  
 inherit the earth, 101

- inheritance, 40, 90, 95, 103  
 iniquity, 90  
 inner circle, 63  
 inner peace, 56  
 inner person, 120  
 innocent, 118  
 inside, 100  
 inspiration, 66  
 instructing, 90  
 instruction, 47  
 instructions, 121  
 instruments of unrighteousness, 91  
 integrity, 55, 126, 127  
 intelligence, 59  
 intentional alterations, 67  
 intentions, 108  
 intercede, 38  
 intercession, 50, 92  
 intercessions, 104  
 intimidate, 59  
 investment, 16  
 invisible, 108  
 irrevocable, 89  
 Isaac, 109  
 island, 122  
 Israel, 89, 109  
  
 Jacob, 109  
 jailer, 122  
 James, 94  
 jealous, 77, 113  
 Jerusalem, 88, 95, 100, 111, 119, 129, 134  
*Jerusalem*, 115  
 jesting, 95  
 Jesus, 77, 78, 81, 90, 94, 98, 105, 109–114, 125, 128, 134  
 Jesus became flesh, 87  
 Jesus built competent men, 23  
 Jesus came from heaven, 111  
 Jesus came in flesh, 125  
 Jesus commanded, 94  
 Jesus did not please himself, 127  
 Jesus died, 90  
 Jesus dwelt among us, 87  
 Jesus emphasized a few, 23  
 Jesus existed before John the Baptist, 87  
 Jesus expects men to follow Him, 24  
 Jesus gave Himself for us, 90  
 Jesus in you, 106  
 Jesus is head, 118  
 Jesus is Lord, 101, 128  
 Jesus obeyed the Father, 53  
 Jesus overcame the world, 113  
 Jesus prayed, 104  
 Jesus rose, 90  
 Jesus spent time with disciples, 23  
 Jesus spoke from the Father, 127  
 Jesus the only life, 17  
 Jesus the only truth, 17  
 Jesus the only way, 17  
*Jesus unchanging*, 117  
 Jesus was God, 87  
 Jesus was in beginning, 87  
 Jesus was with God, 87  
 Jesus, Creator, 87  
 Jesus, from Father, 127  
 Jesus, full of grace, 87  
 Jesus, full of truth, 87  
 Jesus, in disciples, 104  
 Jesus, in the Father, 127  
 Jesus, left alone, 113  
 Jesus, life, 87  
 Jesus, the light of men, 87  
 Jesus, the Word, 87  
 Jew, 130  
 Jewish leaders, 101  
 Jews, 89, 100, 101, 105, 109, 113, 134  
 John, 94, 105, 109, 115  
 John the Baptist, 78, 94, 105, 108, 111  
 joined, 91  
 joint heir, 59  
 joint heirs of Jesus, 50  
 joints, 91  
 Joseph, 94, 109, 114  
 journal, 68  
 joy, 110, 116  
 joy may be full, 113  
 Judah, 89  
 Judas Iscariot, 109  
 Judea, 134  
 judge, 81, 91, 115, 119  
 judge those in the Church, 132  
 judged, 114, 121  
 Judgment, 96  
 judgment, 53, 100, 118, 127  
 judgment seat, 115  
 just, 56, 98  
 justice, 19  
 justification, 99  
 justified, 51, 87, 95, 99, 101  
 justified by faith, 101  
 justify, 60  
  
 keeps, 89, 93  
 key to growth, 10  
 keys, 81  
 kill, 89, 134  
 killed, 131  
 kind, 57, 58, 92, 130, 131  
 kindness, 90, 116  
 kinds of gifts, 107  
 kinds of service, 107  
 King, 88  
 King James Bible, 67

- King of Israel, 88  
 Kingdom, 13, 133  
 kingdom, 132  
 kingdom come, 104  
 Kingdom of God, 31  
 kingdom of God, 77, 111  
 Kingdom of Heaven, 78, 81, 101, 135  
 Kingdom of heaven, 100  
 Kingdom of the Son, 103  
 kissed, 99  
 knee, 133  
 knew, 95, 112  
 knit to people, 64  
 knit together, 90, 91, 107  
 know, 90, 93, 110, 122, 131  
 know fully, 131  
 know Him, 82  
 know in part, 131  
 know Jesus, 127  
 know the Father, 49, 127  
 knowledge, 91, 98, 103, 106, 107, 118, 131  
 knowledge of God, 103  
 knowledge of the truth, 104  
 known, 110, 131  
 known world, 134  
 knows, 131  
 knows all, 131  
 knows God, 130
- labor, 94, 96, 129, 134  
 labor of love, 44  
 labored, 83  
 labors, 120  
 lack, 119  
 lack of faith, 132  
 laid, 131  
 lame, 133, 134  
 lands, 80, 96  
 Laodicea, 20  
 last, 80, 96  
 Law, 99, 100  
 law, 91, 99, 129  
 law of the Spirit of life, 92  
 lawless, 121  
 lay down lives, 131  
 lay down your life, 129  
 Lay hands, 129  
 laying on of hands, 82  
 Lazarus, 122  
 lead person to Christ, 8  
 leaders, 13  
 leadership, 59  
 learn, 92, 107  
 leave, 80, 97  
 leavens, 135  
 led by the Spirit, 92, 116  
 left all, 80, 96
- legal, 97  
 legalistic people, 106  
 Lend, 130  
 letter, 82, 91  
 level life, 56  
 liberal scholars, 67  
 liberty, 116, 131  
 lie, 98, 130  
 life, 89, 91–93, 98, 99, 101, 111, 122, 127, 131  
 life abundantly, 89  
 life assessment, 55  
 life in the Spirit, 111  
 life is hidden, 116  
 life of the church, 8  
 life-changing community, 19  
 lifestyle of a disciple, 68  
 lift up holy hands, 104  
 lifted up, 127  
 ligaments, 91  
 Light, 81  
 light, 17, 59, 60, 68, 81, 98, 103, 116, 117, 122, 127,  
     130  
 light everyone, 94  
 light of the world, 94  
 lights, 95  
 like Him, 93  
 like minded, 83  
 like-minded, 129  
 likeness, 91  
 lion, 114  
 lips, 83  
 listen, 9, 46, 58  
 listen to God, 105  
 listens, 93, 132  
 little, 99  
 little child, 135  
 little children, 82, 135  
 little Christ, 7  
 little one, 133  
 little ones, 77  
 live, 91, 92, 115, 121  
 live by faith, 99  
 live by heavenly values, 58  
 live by the Spirit, 116  
 live by word, 57  
 live forever, 111  
 live in victory, 9  
 live is Christ, 105  
 live like a disciple, 16  
 live to God, 91, 99  
 live to ourselves, 80, 97  
 live to the Lord, 133  
 lives, 111, 133  
 living, 108, 115  
 living bread, 111  
 living God, 120  
 living hope, 93

- living sacrifice, 115
- living stone, 82
- living stones, 117
- long for pure milk, 82
- look at the heart, 58
- loose, 81, 132
- loosed, 81
- Lord, 114, 128
- Lord and Savior, 98
- lose, 7
- lose control, 61
- lose it, 97, 112
- lose our saltiness, 94
- loses, 111
- loses his life, 112
- loses your life, 97
- loss, 45, 110
- lost, 77, 121
- love, 7, 9, 24, 69, 82, 90, 93, 94, 98, 106, 107, 116, 120, 121, 125, 126, 129–132
- love builds, 131
- love for God, 60
- love God, 92
- love Jesus, 129
- love little, 99
- love much, 99
- love my wife, 59
- love never fails, 131
- love of Christ, 80, 92, 97
- love of God, 59, 101
- love of money, 58, 117, 121
- love of possessions, 57
- love of the Father, 104
- love one another, 129
- love others, 130
- Love the Lord, 130
- love the word of God, 57
- loved, 81, 128
- loved darkness, 81
- lovely, 56, 98
- lover of good, 60
- loves, 104, 110, 112, 130
- loving, 19, 63, 129
- loving as brothers, 83
- lovingly, 59
- lower place, 51
- lowliness, 107
- lowly things, 118
- Luke, 126
- lukewarm, 20
- lust, 40, 92, 116
- lust of the eyes, 117
- lust of the flesh, 117
- lustre, 49
- lusts, 93, 116
- lusts of men, 115
- lying wonders, 121
- Lystra, 113
- made many disciples, 133
- made sin, 80, 97
- magnetism, 59
- maimed, 133
- Majesty, 89
- majesty, 49, 105
- make disciples, 7, 9, 10, 133
  - battle cry, 9
  - called, 9
  - core mission, 9
  - worldly pursuit, 9
- make God look good, 56
- malice, 92
- Malta, 122
- mammon, 37
- manager, 58
- manifestation, 107
- manifold wisdom, 126
- manipulate, 59
- manuscripts, 67
- many, 107
- many believed, 122
- marriage, 55
- marriage bed undefiled*, 117
- Marriage is honorable*, 117
- married, 59
- Martha, 80, 96
- martyred, 134
- Mary, 80, 94, 96, 109, 114
- Master, 24, 110
- master, 68
- master biblical truths, 66
- material possessions, 58
- mature, 57
- mature disciple, 68
- means of gain, 126
- measure, 107, 119
- measure of faith, 106
- medieval, 19
- meekness, 58
- Melchizedek, 88
- members, 91–93, 106, 107
- mentor, 47
- merciful, 101, 119, 130
- mercy, 89, 91, 109, 114
- message, 131
- messes of children cleaned up, 47
- midst, 132
- might, 103
- mighty, 106, 118, 125
- mild-mannered, 58
- milk, 81, 82
- milk of the word, 39
- million in 21 years, 16
- millstone, 133

- minas, 110
- mind, 83, 115, 118
- mind of the Spirit, 92
- minds, 92, 93, 121
- minister, 69
- ministry, 36, 63, 69, 125
- ministry of reconciliation, 80, 97
- ministry of the word*, 115
- miracles, 8, 112, 121, 122, 125, 134
- misdirected, 68
- misguided, 68
- misinformed, 74
- mistreat, 130
- model, 68
- model lifestyle, 14
- model the lifestyle, 28
- model truth, 57
- modeled, 64, 66
- models, 66
- moderation, 57, 60
- modern church, 7
  - ineffectual, 7
- modest, 56, 58
- money, 58, 134
- money-hungry, 58
- moral excellence, 98
- more, 110, 130, 132
- morning star, 114
- mortal bodies, 91, 92
- mortify, 43
- mortifying the carnal nature, 53
- Most High, 130
- mother, 46, 109
- mourn, 101, 132
- mouth, 101, 109
- moved by the Spirit, 105
- much, 99
- much fruit, 110
- multitude, 78, 113, 115, 134
- multitude of fish, 95
- multitude of sins, 107
- multitudes, 111, 121
- murder, 100
- murderer, 131
- must happen, 112
- mustard seed, 135
- mustard seed faith, 99
- mutual respect, 59
- mystery, 40
  
- name, 114, 134
- name above all names, 128
- name of God, 114
- name of Jesus, 103
- name of the City of God, 114
- name of the Father, 89, 104
- nations, 89, 99, 114, 133
  
- near, 77, 90
- neck, 133
- need, 91, 104, 120
- need nothing, 118
- neglect, 96
- neighbor, 127
- nets, 94
- never perish, 89
- new, 93
- new commandment, 129
- new convert, 59
- new covenant, 89
- new creation, 80, 97
- New King James Bible, 67
- new man, 92
- new name of Jesus, 114
- New wine, 111
- new wine skins, 111
- newness, 91
- niche, 53
- Nicodemus, 81
- night, 98, 122
- no absolutes, 74
- no company, 83
- no compromise with sin, 33
- no darkness, 98
- no fear, 130
- no plan B, 22
- no regret, 81
- no spectators, 14
- no work, no eat, 83
- noble, 118
- not ashamed, 78
- not depend on man, 106
- not excessive, 56
- not experienced, 82
- not fitting, 78
- not flighty, 56
- not for a minute, 106
- not forgive, 98
- not forgiven, 104
- not greater, 128
- not have God, 125
- not hold the fort, 35
- not in darkness, 127
- not me but us*, 104
- not moved, 61
- not nervous, 56
- not of faith sin, 133
- not of flesh, 106
- not overdo, 56
- not perish, 17
- not proud, 131
- not self-pleasing, 59
- not self-willed, 59
- not shrink, 134
- not silent, 125

- not spiritual, 81  
 not work  
     sinfullness of, 83  
 note, 132  
 nothing, 92, 122
- obedience, 24, 27, 88, 93, 122  
 obedience of Christ, 106  
 obedience of faith, 89, 133  
 obedient, 59, 96, 128  
 obedient in all things, 95  
 obey, 7, 24, 50, 95, 96, 99  
 obey Him, 59  
 obey Jesus, 16  
 obey the word, 83  
 obeyed, 94, 95  
 obligation, 48  
 observation, 68  
 observe, 68, 133  
 obtain, 89  
 obtain mercy, 101  
 obtain salvation, 98  
 obtained promise, 108  
 obtained promises, 108  
 occasion, 99  
 occasion for stumbling, 134  
 occasions of stumbling, 118  
 of God, 117  
 offended, 55, 133  
 offenses, 57  
 offered once, 89  
 offspring, 99  
 offspring of David, 87  
 oikos, 77  
 oil, 99  
 old man, 91, 93  
 old things, 80, 97  
 older ones, 94  
 oldness, 91  
 Omega, 88  
 once for all, 89  
 one, 49, 89, 104  
 one accord, 129  
 one body, 107  
 one God, 131  
 one in Jesus, 104  
 one Lord, 131  
 one mind, 129  
 one Spirit, 107  
 one with the Father, 104  
 only Son, 81  
 opened, 109  
 opened minds, 105  
 opinions, 133  
 opposing, 114  
 oppressed, 121  
 oppression, 9, 109
- ordered, 61  
 ordinance, 78, 92  
 ordinances, 91, 92  
 organic evangelism, 19  
 other-centeredness, 43  
 others better, 129  
 ought, 128  
 ought to know, 131  
 out of season, 125  
 outcry, 92  
 outside, 118, 128  
 overcome, 82, 83, 114, 117  
 overcome sin, 8, 40, 41  
 overcome the devil, 9, 43  
 overcome the world, 43  
 overcomes, 93, 114  
 overcoming, 19, 53  
 overcoming evil, 8  
 overindulge, 57  
 overindulgence, 57  
 oversee, 13  
 overseer, 128  
 overseers, 55  
 overwhelmed, 46  
 own family, 97  
 own life, 97  
 own things, 129  
 oxen, 134
- Pagan, 19  
 pagan-like chapels, 20  
 pagan-like clergy, 20  
 paid back, 98  
 pain, 46  
 panic, 46  
 parable, 109  
 parable of debt, 98  
 Paradise, 114  
 parent, 9, 46  
 parents, 108  
 partakers, 98, 103, 108  
 partakes doubting, 133  
 partiality, 129  
 passed, 131  
 passed away, 80, 97  
 passing away, 117  
 passions, 116  
 pastoral attention, 8  
 patience, 96, 107, 116  
 patient, 57, 58, 114, 126, 131  
 pattern of discipleship, 13  
 pattern your life, 68  
 Paul, 94, 96, 100, 105, 113, 114, 122, 125, 126, 129,  
     132, 133  
 Paul prayed, 103  
 Paul preached, 126  
 Pay attention, 125



- peace, 58, 59, 83, 90, 92, 98, 101, 116, 126, 133  
 peace with God, 101  
 peaceful, 127  
 peacemakers, 101  
 pearls, 119  
 Pentecost, 81, 107  
 people for His own possession, 117  
 perfect, 104, 115, 127, 129, 130  
 perfect in Christ, 126  
 perfect in Jesus, 106  
 perfect love, 130  
 perfected, 93, 130  
 perfected together, 118  
 perfecter, 110  
 perfecting, 107  
 perfecting holiness, 81  
 perfection, 82  
 perform, 99  
 perish, 77, 78, 81, 100, 111  
 perish with use, 91  
 perishes, 131  
 persecute, 83, 113  
 persecuted, 80, 97, 101, 105, 113  
 persecution, 109, 114  
 perseverance, 98, 101, 104, 110  
 perseverance of hope, 44  
 perseverance of Job, 114  
 persistent, 104  
 personal freedoms, 57  
 personal righteousness, 24, 100, 111  
 personality, 59  
 persuade, 131  
 persuade men, 80, 97  
 persuasive words, 122  
 perverse, 95  
 Peter, 78, 81, 82, 94, 105, 109, 112, 113, 115, 122  
 petition, 116  
 Petitions, 104  
 petra, bedrock, 81  
 petros, little stone, 81  
 pews, 9  
 Pharisees, 100, 111  
 Pharisees persecuted Jesus, 113  
 philanderer, 56  
 Philemon, 96  
 Philippi, 122  
 physical attacks, 57  
 physical violence, 57  
 physician, 78, 126  
 pierced, 42  
 pierced to the heart, 78  
 piercing, 108  
 pillar, 114  
 Pisidian Antioch, 113  
 plants, 81  
 please, 92, 127  
 please all men, 134  
 please God, 108  
 please Him, 103  
 please men, 126  
 please self, 40  
 pleased, 87, 95  
 pleases the Lord, 116  
 pleasing to God, 60  
 pleasing to Him, 117  
 pleasing to the Lord, 115  
 pleasure, 95, 121  
 pleasures, 24, 93  
 pledge, 40, 90  
 political correctness, 67  
 poor, 106, 119  
 poor in spirit, 101  
 poor widow, 119  
 pornography, 56  
 position, 56  
 possession, 90  
 poured, 93, 101  
 poverty, 119  
 power, 8, 14, 56, 74, 78, 101, 107, 115, 118, 120, 122, 132  
*power*, 118  
 power from on high, 105  
 power of God, 122  
 powers, 92, 126  
 practical, 64  
 praise, 49  
 praiseworthy, 56, 98  
 Pray, 104  
 pray, 30, 43, 52, 92, 104, 130  
 pray at all times, 104  
 pray in Spirit, 104  
 prayed, 103, 109, 113, 133  
 prayer, 68, 81, 107, 116, 129, 132, 134  
 prayer life, 69  
 prayers, 104  
 praying, 53  
 Preach, 125  
 preach, 77, 86, 110  
 preached, 81, 87, 90, 105, 112, 113, 129, 133, 135  
 preaching, 122, 133  
 preaching the word, 134  
 precious, 82  
 precious blood, 93  
 precious promises, 98  
 predestination, 40  
 predestined, 40, 51  
 prefer, 106  
 premeditate, 112  
 prepare, 93  
 prescribed, 114  
 presence of God, 60  
 present, 92  
 present evil age, 92  
 preserves, 111

- press, 110  
 pressing toward the goal, 53  
 prevail, 81  
 pride, 59  
 pride of life, 117  
 principalities, 92, 126  
 principles, 57  
 prison, 113  
 privilege, 48  
 prize, 110  
 proclaim, 18, 86, 117  
 Proclaim Jesus, 126  
 prodigal, 77  
 prodigal son, 77  
 produce fruit, 91  
 productive, 43, 68  
 professional clergy  
     not needed to make disciples, 7  
 profit, 107, 134  
 program, 36  
 programs, 21  
 promiscuous, 56  
 promise, 40, 91, 99, 108, 115, 116  
 promise of the Father, 105  
 promises, 96, 99  
 proof, 94, 95, 108  
 proper perspective, 56  
 property, 61  
 prophesied, 109  
 prophecies, 121  
 prophesy, 105, 107, 131  
 Prophets, 100  
 prophets, 90, 107  
 prosper, 131  
 protection, 64, 69  
 prove, 115  
 proven, 59  
 proven character, 101  
 provide, 7, 129, 133  
 provides, 120  
 proving, 116  
 provision, 111  
 provoked, 131  
 provoking, 116  
 prudence, 40, 56, 90  
 prudent, 56  
 prunes, 110  
 publicly, 134  
 puffed up, 83  
 pugnacious, 57  
 punishment, 130  
 pure, 56, 93, 98, 127, 129  
 pure heart, 126  
 pure in heart, 101  
 purification, 46  
 purifier of silver, 45  
 purifies, 93  
 purify, 90  
 purity, 8, 125  
 purpose, 9, 43, 92  
 purpose of God, 9  
 pursue, 83, 126  
 pursuit of God, 19  
 put away, 82, 132  
 put off sin, 60  
 put off the old man, 43  
 put on Christ, 116  
 put on the new man, 43  
 putting off, 92  
 python script, 16  
  
 quarrelsome, 57  
 quench, 117  
 quiet life, 104, 118  
 quietness, 56, 83  
  
 race, 110  
 radiance, 49, 88  
 rage, 45  
 raise, 111  
 raised, 91, 92, 99, 101, 114, 122, 129  
*raised Jesus*, 118  
 random teaching, 21  
 reach one person per year, 16  
 reach out, 13  
 readiness of mind, 134  
 ready, 83, 96  
 real teaching, 64  
 realized, 87  
 reap, 128  
*reap bountifully*, 119  
 reason, 83  
 reasonable, 127  
 reasonably, 106  
 rebellion, 83  
 rebellious, 83  
 rebuke, 99, 125, 129  
 rebuked, 132  
 receive, 77, 78, 96, 114–117, 132  
 receive Jesus, 87  
*receive what is from heaven*, 105  
 received, 106, 107  
 received the Lord, 90  
 received up, 87  
 receives, 112  
 recognition, 59  
 reconcile, 46  
 reconciled, 59, 87, 92, 101  
 recover, 86  
 redeem, 90, 109, 116  
 redeem the time, 118  
 redeemed, 93  
 redeemer, 18  
 redeeming, 116

- redemption, 40, 90, 103, 118
- redemptive mission, 29
- refiner, 45
- reflection, 45
- refreshed, 94
- refused to forgive, 98
- regeneration, 93
- region, 113
- reign, 91, 121
- reign in life, 101
- reject God, 116
- rejected, 82, 111
- rejection, 45
- rejoice, 83, 100, 106, 116
- rejoiced, 122
- relationally, 74
- relationship, 10, 75
- relativism, 74
- relax, 46
- release, 81, 86
- released, 81
- remain, 110, 130
- remain in Him, 91
- remains, 82, 93, 111, 117, 130, 131
- remains forever, 117
- remission of sin, 105
- remnant, 89
- remove impurities, 45
- removed, 132
- renewed, 92, 93
- renewed in your mind, 43
- renewing, 93, 115
- renounce all, 97
- repay, 56, 83, 114
- repels, 61
- repent, 38, 60, 78
  - change your mind, 78
  - turn, 78
  - turn from sin, 78
  - turn to God, 78
- repentance, 46, 78, 81, 82, 105, 114, 134
  - granted by God, 78
- repented, 112
- repents, 67, 99, 132
- replacement, 109
- represent Jesus, 18
- reproach, 101
- reprobate mind, 78
- reproduce, 9, 46
- reproduction, 69
- reprove, 116
- requirements, 97
- resisted, 110
- resists, 94
- resolve problems, 58
- resources, 57, 110
- Respect, 94
- respect, 49, 83
- respected, 61
- respectfully, 38, 74
- responsibility, 110
- rest, 108
- restless evil, 127
- restoration of Peter, 20
- restore, 128
- restored gently, 65
- resurrection, 82, 87, 91, 115, 122
- retaliate, 58
- return, 88
- returned, 111
- returned to God, 128
- reveal, 81
- revealed, 78, 81, 93, 116
- revealed by light, 116
- revealed in flesh, 87
- reveals, 116
- Revelation, 114
- revelation, 45, 81, 93, 106, 118
- revelations, 82
- reverence, 90
- reward, 130
- rewarder, 108
- rich, 119, 120
- rich in mercy, 90
- rich man, 80, 96
- riches, 90, 109, 120
- riches of His inheritance, 118
- richly, 93
- right, 39, 83
- right eye, 100
- right hand, 100, 116, 118
- right to be sons, 87
- righteous, 59, 83, 93, 98, 108, 131, 133
- righteousness, 82, 91–93, 99, 101, 108–110, 115, 116, 118, 121, 126
- righteousness of faith, 99
- righteousness of God, 80, 97
- risen, 105, 118
- rivalry, 129
- road to Emmaus, 111
- robbers, 130
- rock, 81
- rod, 132
- role of the clergy, 8
- Roman citizenship, 119
- Romans, 106
- Romans Road, 75
  - 10:13, 76
  - 10:9-10, 76
  - 3:23, 76
  - 5:1, 76
  - 5:8, 76
  - 6:23, 76
  - 8:1, 76

- rooted, 90, 120  
 rose again, 80, 97  
 royal priesthood, 117  
 rudiments, 82  
 Rufus, 113  
 rule, 97  
 rule my house, 58  
 rule well, 129  
 rulers, 96  
 rules, 120  
 rumors of wars, 112  
 run, 110  
 run to win, 7  
 runs, 109
- Sabbath, 113  
 sabbath, 108  
 SACRED, 45  
 sacrifices, 117  
 Sadducees, 111  
 safe, 45, 65  
 saints, 90, 107  
 saints glorified in Jesus, 103  
 sake of Jesus, 113  
 sake of righteousness, 101  
 salt, 60, 68  
 salt is good, 97  
 salt of the world, 94  
 salvation, 78, 81, 82, 89, 90, 96, 101, 109  
 Samaria, 134  
 Samaritan, 105, 130  
 same God, 107  
 same Lord, 107  
 same love, 129  
 same mind, 83, 128  
 same Spirit, 107  
 sanctification, 82, 90, 91, 116, 118  
 sanctified, 28, 49, 90, 104  
 sanctify, 83, 93  
 sand, 95  
 Sanhedrin, 115  
 Satan, 90, 112, 118, 121  
 Saul, 80, 95, 97  
 save, 96, 111  
 save for giving, 119  
 save your life, 97  
 save yourself, 125  
 saved, 81, 90, 99–101, 104, 112, 121, 122, 134  
 Savior, 100  
 scattered, 112, 113, 134  
 scourged, 113  
 scream, 61  
 scribes, 100, 134  
 Scripture, 30, 38, 88, 95, 114, 133  
 scripture, 67  
 Scriptures, 105  
 sea, 95
- sealed with the Spirit, 90  
 seasoned men and women, 8  
 seasoned with salt, 105  
 second death, 114  
 secret, 119  
 secular court, 118  
 secure, 60  
 seducing spirits, 125  
 see God, 101  
 see Him, 93  
 seed, 109, 119, 135  
 seek, 77, 116  
 seek and save the lost, 28  
 seek first the kingdom of God, 58  
 seek forgiveness, 104  
 seek Him, 108  
 seek its own, 131  
 seek own, 134  
 seek peace, 83  
 seeks, 111  
 seeks his life, 112  
 seen, 93, 108, 119, 130  
 seen of men, 104  
 self, 40  
 self-control, 98, 107, 116  
 self-controlled, 56, 61, 107  
 self-imposed worship, 91  
 self-righteousness, 60, 66  
 selfless, 60  
 sell everything, 80, 96  
 sells everything, 135  
 senses, 82  
 sensible, 56  
 sensitive, 57  
 sensitive to sin, 19, 60  
 sent, 104, 128, 130  
 sent them out, 66  
 sentence of death, 114  
 separate, 90, 92, 135  
 separates, 132  
 separates him God, 100  
 seriousness, 127  
 Sermon on the Mount, 111  
 sermons, 9  
 servant, 7, 98, 101, 109, 128  
 servant of all, 51  
 servant to all, 59  
 servant-leaders, 106  
 servant-like, 60  
 servants, 55, 91, 110, 122, 128  
 servants of God, 110  
 serve, 7, 8, 57, 78, 94, 106, 128, 129  
 serve God, 90  
 serve God together, 64  
 serve well, 128  
 served, 132  
 service, 43, 69

- serving, 53, 107  
 set before you, 77  
 set free, 119  
 set the members, 107  
*seven deacons*, 115  
 seventy, 77  
 severe, 89  
 severity, 91  
 sexual fantasies, 56  
 shake the dust, 77  
 shaken, 115, 121  
 shallow, 109  
 share, 69, 120  
 share Christ, 69  
 share the gospel, 74  
 sheep, 77, 89, 112, 113, 134  
 Shepherd, 89  
 shepherd, 64, 77  
 shepherd Israel, 89  
 shepherd the flock, 128  
 shine before men, 94  
 ship wreck, 122  
 show, 92  
 shown blameless, 59  
 sick, 77, 78, 121, 134  
 sickness, 121  
 sift, 112  
 sifting, 52  
 sight, 115  
 signs, 88, 96, 115, 121, 122, 126  
 Silas, 122  
 silversmith, 114  
 Simeon, 109  
 Simon, 95  
 Simon of Cyrene, 113  
 sin, 92, 93, 98, 110, 131  
     fall short, 76  
     miss the mark, 76  
 sin and death, 92  
 sin in my life, 60  
 sin in the inward man, 66  
 sincere, 80, 96  
 sincere faith, 126  
 sincerity, 64  
 sinful passions, 91  
 sinful woman, 99  
 sinners, 78, 101, 130  
 sinners claiming Christianity, 132  
 sinning, 93  
 sins, 90, 93, 129, 132  
 sins forgiven, 40, 82  
 sixty, 109  
 slander, 92  
 slandered, 133  
 sleep spiritually, 60  
 small group, 13, 63  
 smooth, 118  
 snatch, 89  
 SOAP, 67  
 sober, 57, 93, 98, 107, 125  
 sober-minded, 60  
 sold under sin, 91  
 solid food, 81, 82  
 solid foundation, 81  
 solution-oriented, 58  
 Son, 93  
 Son of God, 81, 87, 93, 122  
 Son of Man, 88  
 Son of the living God, 80, 97  
 sorrow, 81  
 sought, 89, 111  
 soul, 93, 108, 133  
 soul prospers, 131  
 souls, 96  
 sound a trumpet, 119  
 sound doctrine, 127, 128  
 sound mind, 107  
 sound words, 126  
 soundness of speech, 127  
 sower, 119  
 sows, 128  
*sows bountifully*, 119  
 speak, 107, 112, 117, 118, 125  
 speak gently, 58  
 speak tenderly, 55  
 speak what is in your heart, 20  
 speaking, 107  
 speaking deceit, 83  
 speaks, 113  
 speaks to men, 107  
 speech, 122  
 speech with grace, 105  
 spend time, 9  
 Spirit, 82, 90, 92, 101, 105, 107, 109, 111, 112, 115,  
     117, 120, 122, 130  
 spirit, 81, 91–93, 108, 111, 117, 125  
 Spirit controls me, 57  
 Spirit declare future, 86  
 Spirit declares to us, 86  
 Spirit glorifies Jesus, 86  
 Spirit lives in us, 119  
 Spirit of adoption, 50  
 spirit of fear, 107  
 spirit of gentleness, 128, 132  
 spirit of wisdom, 118  
 spirit saved, 132  
 Spirit sent, 86  
 Spirit without measure, 105  
 Spirit-filled life, 20  
 spirits, 94  
 spiritual, 91, 128  
 spiritual authority, 132  
 spiritual blessing, 90  
 spiritual blindness, 74

- spiritual child, 40
- spiritual gift, 90, 106
- spiritual gifts, 43, 107, 131
- spiritual house, 117
- spiritual infant, 39
- spiritual possessions, 57
- spiritual service, 115
- spiritual wisdom, 103
- spiritually dead, 38
- spiritually mature, 60
- spoke, 107, 110
- spoke the word, 115
- spouse, 55
- spread, 113
- square footage, 19
- stability, 56
- stages of disciple growth, 38
- Stand firm, 116
- stand firm, 105, 116, 120
- Stand up, 120
- stand with each other, 10
- stands, 95
- stature, 107
- stay there, 77
- steadfast, 92
- steadfast in prayer, 104
- steadfastness, 98
- steady, 56
- steal, 89
- step out in faith, 7
- Stephen, 115, 134
- steward, 56
- stewards of God, 128
- stewardship, 57
- Stir, 107
- stoned, 113
- stood, 114
- stood against, 100
- storm the heights, 35
- strange doctrines*, 117
- strength, 42
- strengthened, 103, 114, 120
- strengthens, 120
- stressful, 45
- strife, 121
- strike, 61
- strikes, 130
- stripped, 92
- strive, 110
- striving, 110
- strong, 8, 43, 82, 106, 118, 120, 127
- strongholds, 43, 106
- stubborn, 60
- stumble, 98, 100, 109, 133
- stumbled, 109, 112
- stumbling, 99, 110, 112, 130
- stumbling block, 131
- stumbling stone, 109
- subdued kingdoms, 108
- subject, 94, 107
- subjection, 88, 96, 110
- submission, 19
- submit, 59, 94, 99
- submit to, 94
- submit to my husband, 59
- subordinate, 56
- subverting those who hear, 126
- success*, 113
- successful, 114
- suffer, 96, 110, 111
- suffer hardship, 125
- suffered, 88, 115
- suffering, 101, 114
- suffering of Christ, 105
- supernatural, 74
- supplied, 91
- supplies the Spirit, 115
- supply, 120
- support, 13
- suppress, 78
- swine, 119
- synagogue, 113
- systematic, 64
- systematic teaching, 21
- Tabatha, 122
- take advantage, 58
- take away, 93
- take hold, 110, 121
- take up your cross, 97
- take your cross, 112
- taken, 80, 96
- taken away, 110
- takes away, 110
- tarry for the promise, 30
- tasted death, 88
- tasteless, 97
- taught, 78, 111, 125, 130
- taught of Jesus, 7
- tax collectors, 130
- Teach, 127
- teach, 47, 69, 82, 120, 125, 126
  - to observe what Jesus commanded, 9
- teach disciples, 133
- teach to obey, 10
- teachable, 57
- Teacher, 128
- teachers, 82, 127
- teaching, 57, 100, 125, 127, 134
- teaching of the apostles, 81
- team player, 60
- tear you, 119
- tears, 99
- temperate, 56

- template, 22, 44  
 temple, 109, 119, 134  
 temptation, 104  
 tempted, 88, 95, 112  
 tender, 69  
 tender hearted, 92  
 tender mercies, 129  
 tenderhearted, 83  
 tenderly affectionate, 106  
 terrified, 95  
 test all things, 117  
 test the spirits, 117  
 test yourself, 106  
 tested, 7, 59  
 testified, 105, 134  
 testifies, 92  
 testify, 110  
 testify of Jesus, 7  
 testimony, 78, 115  
 Thankful, 103  
 thanksgiving, 104  
 the Father in Jesus, 127  
 the teaching, 128  
 Thessalonians, 78, 82  
 thief, 89  
 thieves, 134  
 things, 99  
*things heard*, 98  
*things learned*, 98  
 things not seen, 108  
 things of others, 129  
*things received*, 98  
*things saw*, 98  
 think, 120  
 thirst, 101  
 thirst for attention, 59  
 thirty, 109  
 thistles, 82  
 thorns, 82  
 thoroughly cleansed from sin, 65  
 those, 134  
 thought, 106  
 thoughts, 24, 108  
 three, 112  
 three times, 134  
 threefold cord, 63  
 threefold cord principle, 14  
 threw, 134  
 throne, 89  
 throne of grace, 43, 45, 60, 91  
 throne of Jesus, 114  
 thrown away, 94  
 thrown into fire, 110  
 thrown out, 97, 110  
 time, 69, 78, 88  
 Timothy, 94, 121, 125, 132  
 title, 56  
 Titus, 94  
 to the end, 128  
 tongue, 83, 127, 131, 133  
 tongues, 107, 131  
 towel, 128  
 towns of Israel, 77  
 tradition, 83  
 traditions, 82  
 train, 14  
 trained, 47  
 trample them, 119  
 tranquil, 104  
 transformational, 51  
 transformations, 67  
 transformed, 51, 115  
 transgresses, 125  
 transgressions, 90  
 translated, 103  
 transparent, 65  
 travail, 38  
 treasure, 135  
 treasure in heaven, 80, 96  
 treasures of knowledge, 90  
 treasures of wisdom, 90  
 tree, 135  
 tree of life, 114  
 trembling, 95  
 trespasses, 90, 92, 99  
 trials, 52  
 trigger, 45  
 triumphantly, 95  
 triumphing, 92  
 Troas, 129  
 trouble, 113  
 troubled, 121  
 true, 56, 98  
 true disciples, 20  
 true vine, 110  
 trust in themselves, 114  
 trustworthy, 55  
 truth, 78, 81, 82, 90, 98, 104, 107, 116, 121, 127, 131  
 turn away, 118  
 turn *from* sin, 42  
 turn *to* God, 42  
 turn to the Lord, 60  
 turned, 78, 112  
 turning from evil, 60  
 twelve, 77  
 two, 132  
 two by two, 77  
 unafraid, 125  
 unbelief, 99, 108, 132  
 unbeliever, 132  
 unbelievers, 9, 38, 69  
 unbelieving generation, 132  
 unclean, 46

- unclean person, 95
- uncleanness, 92, 93, 95, 116, 126
- uncontrolled, 57
- under control, 61
- under grace, 91
- under heaven, 101
- under law, 91, 116
- under the earth, 128
- understand, 105
- understand the truths, 68
- understanding, 103, 127
- unfruitful deeds, 116
- united, 91
- unity, 58, 104
- unity of the faith, 107
- unity of the Spirit, 107
- universe, 108
- unlearned, 22
- unproductive, 109
- unquenchable fire, 133
- unreasonable, 103
- unrighteous, 96
- unrighteousness, 42, 82, 98, 121
- unspeakable riches, 126
- unthankful, 130
- unwise, 116
- unworthy servant, 99
- Updated King James Bible, 67
- upholds, 88
- useless, 131
- uttered, 92
- uttermost, 134
  
- vain arguments, 121
- vain repetitions, 104
- validate, 60
- valuable, 108
- value, 51
- value people, 7
- various workings, 107
- vegetables, 133
- verbal abuse, 57
- victim, 55
- victory, 93
- village, 77
- vindictiveness, 57
- violence, 57, 58
- violent, 57
- virgin, 109
- virtues, 93
- virtuous, 56, 98
- vision, 43
- voice, 89
- void, 99
- volatile, 56
  
- wages of sin, 91
- wait, 89, 116
- wait in Jerusalem, 105
- wait on tables*, 115
- waiting, 109
- walk, 69, 92, 103, 116, 118, 130, 132, 133
- walk as He walked, 93
- walk by faith, 115
- walk by the Spirit, 116
- walk in darkness, 98
- walk in Him, 90
- walk in light, 98, 127
- walk in love, 93, 129
- walk in the light, 65
- walk in the Spirit, 60
- walk of faith, 57
- Walk properly, 118
- walk this way, 68
- walk to please God, 116
- walk together, 10
- walk with God, 57
- walk worthy, 18, 107
- walking worthy of the calling, 44
- walks, 130
- warfare, 121
- warned, 111
- wars, 112
- wash, 128
- washed, 128
- washing, 93, 99
- Watch, 120, 125
- watch, 88, 98, 104, 112
- watch carefully, 60
- watchful, 104
- water, 128
- waters, 81
- waver, 99
- way, 127
- way of escape, 95
- way of life, 125
- we belong to Jesus, 133
- we received grace, 87
- weak, 106, 127, 131, 133
- weak in faith, 133
- weak things, 118
- weaker vessel, 59
- weaknesses, 92
- weapons, 106
- weary, 83, 110, 128
- weep, 83
- weeping, 135
- well, 105
- well-adjusted, 56
- well-balanced, 56
- well-being, 45
- well-ordered, 61
- well-pleasing, 115
- wells in Africa, 9



- were, 99  
 whatever, 110  
 wheat, 112  
 whip, 134  
 white garments, 114  
 white stone, 114  
 who is, 88  
 who is to come, 88  
 who was, 88  
 whole body, 127  
 wicked, 98  
 wicked man, 132  
 wickedness, 82, 96, 100, 121  
 widows, 129  
 wife, 128  
 will, 77, 93, 95, 96  
 will done, 104  
 will of Father, do, 95  
 will of God, 103, 115, 116, 129  
 will of man, 105  
 will of the Father, 52, 111  
 will of the Lord, 114  
 willingness to fight, 9  
 wills, 109  
 win souls, 31  
 window, 129  
 wine, 57, 116  
 wine skins, 37  
 wineskin, 20  
 wins, 110  
 winsome, 61  
 wisdom, 40, 90, 95, 115, 118, 122, 127  
 wisdom of men, 122  
 wise, 83, 95, 116, 118, 119, 127  
 wise as serpents, 113  
 wise judgments, 60  
 wise men, 88  
 withdraw, 83  
 withered, 110, 132  
 within, 111  
 without anger, 104  
 without blemish, 41  
 without defect, 59, 90, 92, 98  
 without hypocrisy, 127  
 without partiality, 127  
 without prejudice, 129  
 without reproach, 55  
 without spot, 59, 121  
 witnesses, 105, 115  
 Woe, 99  
 wolves, 113  
 woman, 100  
 wonders, 96, 115, 122, 126  
 word, 69, 80, 82, 88, 96, 109, 110, 112, 113, 125, 127, 129, 131–133  
 word abides in, 8  
 word battles, 126  
 word living in you, 53  
 word of God, 60, 93, 105, 108, 109  
 word of His grace, 126  
 word of life, 95  
 Word of Truth, 126  
 word of truth, 40  
 word spread, 103  
 words, 126  
 words of Jesus, 111  
 words of life, 80, 97  
 words of the Father, 111  
 words remain in us, 110  
 work, 56, 88, 95, 96, 111, 125  
 work of an evangelist, 125  
 work of faith, 44, 103  
 work of faith with power, 44  
 work of serving, 107  
 work of the Lord, 94  
 work out salvation, 95  
 work together, 92  
 work with your hands, 118  
 worked, 94  
 worked miracles, 95  
 workers of iniquity, 95  
 working, 107  
 works, 81, 89, 95, 99, 107, 121, 122, 127, 133  
 works of power, 96  
 works of the law, 115, 116  
 works were evil, 81  
 world, 81, 93, 97, 111, 113, 117, 119, 122  
 world conquest, 35  
 world desperate for Jesus, 17  
 worldly, 79  
 worldly lusts, 90  
 worldly prestige, 74  
 worlds, 88  
 worse than an unbeliever, 129  
 worship, 100  
*worship in spirit and truth*, 105  
 worth, 51  
 worthy, 77, 103, 112, 133  
 worthy of death, 78  
 worthy of the gospel, 105  
 wounded soul, 46  
 wrath, 18, 78, 92, 93, 98, 99, 101  
 wrath of God, 78, 95  
 written, 83  
 wrong, 39  
 yeast, 111, 135  
 yoke of bondage, 116  
 you will receive, 113  
 Young, 94  
 young adults, 43  
 young men, women, 82  
 youthful lusts, 126  
 Zacharias, 108  
 zealous, 107  
 zealous for good works, 90